

Vol

(3)

Please return to:

FOR RETURN ONLY
CITIZENS FREEDOM FOUNDATION
WASHINGTON, D.C. AREA
P.O. BOX 113
KENSINGTON, MARYLAND 20795

STATE OF FLORIDA
CITY OF CLEARWATER
PINELLAS COUNTY

CITY OF CLEARWATER COMMISSION HEARINGS RE:

THE CHURCH OF SCIENTOLOGY

Clearwater City Hall
Clearwater, Florida
Friday, May 7, 1982

RIZMAN COURT REPORTING
18 TREMONT STREET
BOSTON, MASSACHUSETTS 02108
(617) 227-1688

1 City of Clearwater City Commission:

2 Charles LeCher, Mayor
3 Thomas Bustin, City Attorney
4 Anthony L. Shoemaker, City Manager
5 Rita Garvey, City Commissioner
6 Paul Hatchett, Vice Mayor
7 James Calderbank, City Commissioner
8 James Berfield, City Commissioner

CITIZENS FREEDOM FOUNDATION
WASHINGTON, D.C. AREA
P.O. BOX 113
KENSINGTON, MARYLAND 20795

9 Sue Lamkin, City Clerk
10 Cyndie Goudeau, City Clerk

11 Consultants:

12 Michael J. Flynn, Esquire
13 12 Union Wharf
14 Boston, Massachusetts 02109

15 Thomas Greene, Esquire
16 12 Union Wharf
17 Boston, Massachusetts 02109

18 Thomas Hoffman, Esquire
19 12 Union Wharf
20 Boston, Massachusetts 02109

21 Kevin Flynn
22 12 Union Wharf
23 Boston, Massachusetts 02109
24

I N D E X

<u>Witness</u>	<u>Page</u>
Casey Kelley.....	5
Rosie Pace.....	89
Edward Walters.....	118
Rosie Pace.....	122
Edward Walters.....	123
Rosie Pace.....	125
David Ray.....	141
Ernest Hartwell.....	225
Adell Hartwell.....	261
George Meister.....	301

E X H I B I T S

<u>Number</u>	<u>Description</u>	<u>Page</u>
30	HCO policy letter, dated June 1959, regarding duplicate contracts, releases, and promissory notes	76
31	Form affidavit	77
32	Affidavit of Janet Troy	80
33	Non-Enturbulation Order, dated Novem- ber 29, 1981	116
34	Committee of Evidence Report	122
36	Policy letter, entitled "Governing Policy"	226

I N D E X - ContinuedE X H I B I T S

<u>Number</u>	<u>Description</u>	<u>Page</u>
37	Document, entitled "List of Services, Church of Scientology, The Flag Land Base"	231
38	Document, entitled "Accommodations," describing the Fort Harrison Hotel	231
39	Document describing donations	231
40	HCO policy letter, dated October 21, 1968, regarding "Cancellation of Fair Game"	300
41	Letter, dated 8/5/71, from Susan Meister	318
42	Letter, dated 12/5/71, from Susan Meister	319
43	Letter, dated July 7, 1971, to George Meister	328
44	Letter, dated August 19, 1971, to Well County Health Department	328

ooo

1 Clearwater, Florida
2 May 7, 1982
3 Morning Session

4 MR. LeCHER: All right.

5 Ladies and gentlemen, this meeting will come to
6 order. Let's bow our heads for the prayer.

7 We pray for the understanding that we do not give
8 too much attention to a single happening but rather
9 understand its place in the overall picture of good,
10 which is God's perfect plan. Our understanding heart
11 enables us to keep every perspective so that we move
12 through each day on an even keel; we are free from any
13 tendency to resist the events of the day or to feel that
14 things are not working out. Our understanding lets us
15 see each happening in its relation to the whole.

16 We pray to understand truth from fiction and the
17 wisdom to know the difference. Amen.

18 Will you please rise for the Pledge led by Chief
19 Klein.

20 (Whereupon, the Pledge of Allegiance
21 was recited.)

22 MR. LeCHER: Welcome back to the third consecutive
23 day of the City Commission Hearings with respect to
24 Scientology. Again, we're here to -- not to question

1 the faith of the Church, but external activities, business
2 activities, with respect to the City of Clearwater.

3 We have been listening for the past few days, and
4 yesterday we left with a man named Casey Kelley, who has
5 been previously sworn in.

6 Mr. Flynn, is that -- should we go through the
7 ceremony of swearing in again, or is he still sworn in?

8 MR. FLYNN: That won't be necessary, Mayor; he's
9 still under oath.

10 MR. LeCHER: All right.

11
12 CASEY KELLEY, a witness herein,
13 having been previously sworn by a Clerk for the City of
14 Clearwater, was examined and testified as follows:

15 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Kelley, you were speaking yester-
16 day from the general outline.

17 Is there anything else you'd like to add before we
18 ask you some more questions?

19 MR. KELLEY: No. I'm ready to answer questions.

20 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

21 I will start off with a few and, then, go to my
22 right.

23 You testified yesterday that on a good week you'd
24 take in a million dollars in Clearwater and an average

1 week would be four to five hundred thousand dollars
2 and, on an exceptional week, 2.3 million dollars in the
3 City of Clearwater, which is the largest of any of the
4 cities in the country, possibly the world.

5 All that money that was taken in - and I don't want
6 you to name names but -- are there many Church-related
7 businesses in the City of Clearwater? And to your know-
8 ledge, has any of that money been siphoned off or skimmed
9 to support businesses within the City of Clearwater?

10 I don't want you to name businesses because of the
11 possible blackmail --

12 MR. KELLEY: Right.

13 I won't name any because I don't know of any.

14 If that is done, it's done -- it was done without
15 my knowledge.

16 MR. LeCHER: You did say, though, yesterday that
17 you looked at every invoice coming in?

18 MR. KELLEY: Yes.

19 MR. LeCHER: But --

20 MR. KELLEY: But no invoices going out.

21 MR. LeCHER: No invoices going out, just --

22 MR. KELLEY: Right.

23 I didn't see the checks going out.

24 MR. LeCHER: Did the Church prefer to do business

1 with their own?

2 MR. KELLEY: When possible. To my knowledge, there
3 weren't that many Scientology businesses in the area.

4 MR. LeCHER: And when were you last there?

5 MR. KELLEY: October of 1980.

6 MR. LeCHER: When I see these young people walking
7 up and down the street, can they all afford these expen-
8 sive courses or are they indentured for various years to
9 pay for those courses?

10 MR. KELLEY: The majority of them are indentured
11 or on course now. A lot of the students that you see
12 going back and forth between Clearwater buildings and
13 the Fort Harrison are outer organization students or
14 students that are staff members at another org. in
15 another city, and they're just here because here we've
16 got the best training. It's world renowned in the
17 Scientology world that the best training is done here.

18 So, consequently, these outer orgs. send their
19 students here just to be Flag trained. That's like a --
20 it's real important. It's a real honor and status, as
21 it were.

22 MR. LeCHER: Well, if you were young and you don't
23 have family money and you only make \$8.60 a week to
24 \$20.00 a week, how in the world are you or anyone else

1 able eventually or ultimately pay all that money back?

2 MR. KELLEY: You only -- a staff member doesn't
3 have to as long as he stays on staff.

4 MR. LeCHER: But didn't another witness --

5 MR. KELLEY: The courses are free if you work for
6 the organization.

7 MR. LeCHER: Oh, they're free if you work for the
8 organization?

9 MR. KELLEY: Right.

10 You still have to sign the waivers and bonds and
11 the promissory notes. For example --

12 MR. LeCHER: If you leave, is that money a debt
13 that you owe to them?

14 MR. KELLEY: Sort of. It's made to think like you
15 have to pay it back, but, in fact, it's not a legal
16 debt. If I wanted to get back in Scientology now, I'd
17 have to pay back for all the courses that I've already
18 done. And that is a lot of money; that's thousands for
19 the courses that I've already done.

20 MR. LeCHER: Can you estimate how much it would
21 cost for you to buy your way back into the organization?

22 MR. KELLEY: I have no idea what my freeloader's
23 debt is. It's probably thirty to forty thousand dollars.
24 easy.

1 MR. LeCHER: Thirty to forty thousand?

2 MR. KELLEY: Easy.

3 MR. LeCHER: And you were only in the Church of
4 Scientology for three years?

5 MR. KELLEY: Three years.

6 MR. LeCHER: That's an average of ten thousand a
7 year.

8 MR. KELLEY: That's cheap.

9 MR. LeCHER: That's cheap?

10 MR. KELLEY: Relatively.

11 There's people here that spend like seventy thousand
12 dollars a year or more.

13 MR. LeCHER: Seventy thousand a year or more?

14 MR. KELLEY: Or more.

15 MR. LeCHER: Do you know -- would you like to be
16 specific as to any names or --

17 MR. KELLEY: Well, I don't know if that's a fair
18 thing to do for a public person. There's a --

19 MR. LeCHER: I don't --

20 MR. KELLEY: -- a man here from Europe who's been
21 here -- for the three years I was here, he was only gone
22 for about two weeks the whole time --

23 MR. LeCHER: Well, if that's the way they worship
24 and that's what they want to do --

1 MR. KELLEY: Right.

2 MR. LeCHER: -- I wouldn't want to --

3 MR. KELLEY: But there are people that spend seven-
4 ty, eighty thousand dollars a year.

5 MR. FLYNN: One moment, Mayor.

6 MR. KELLEY: I was -- one of the things was I was
7 working for seventy, eighty hours a week, but I still had
8 to sign the promissory notes to pay back in case I didn't
9 complete my contract. My contract was a billion years.

10 MR. LeCHER: A billion years?

11 MR. KELLEY: Yes.

12 All staff members that are staff here have signed
13 a billion-year contract.

14 MR. SHOEMAKER: Excuse me.

15 Mr. Kelley, when you're referring to staff, is that
16 the Sea Org. or --

17 MR. KELLEY: Sea Org. staff, yes.

18 MR. SHOEMAKER: And that is a one billion-year
19 contract?

20 MR. KELLEY: Right.

21 MR. LeCHER: Would a well-known personality, such
22 as John Travolta, would he pay more than the average
23 person or -- is it the ability to pay as to how much you
24 pay for courses?

1 MR. KELLEY: No. It's -- it's a flat rate.

2 MR. LeCHER: So --

3 MR. KELLEY: The problem is the rate was pretty
4 high. They -- those people pay the same price as anyone
5 else.

6 MR. LeCHER: You would pay as much as a college
7 student?

8 MR. KELLEY: Right.

9 MR. LeCHER: Can you walk me through a typical
10 day in the Church of Scientology --

11 MR. KELLEY: It's a --

12 MR. LeCHER: -- from your point of view?

13 MR. KELLEY: Right, from my experience in Clear-
14 water.

15 Boy, if I can remember. You get up at eight,
16 seven-thirty or eight -- I'm trying to remember now.
17 You eat breakfast, be on post by nine, nine-fifteen, work
18 until lunch, had an hour for lunch, then, work from
19 twelve-forty-five in the afternoon until five-forty-five
20 at night -- in the afternoon, an hour for dinner, and
21 then from six-forty-five until ten-thirty at night.
22 Every day.

23 You got a day off every other week if your statis-
24 tics were up.

1 MR. LeCHER: If your stats were down, what happened
2 to you?

3 MR. KELLEY: You didn't get -- you didn't have a
4 liberty; you kept working.

5 MR. LeCHER: Explain to me the stats again for the
6 benefit of the new people watching.

7 MR. KELLEY: Well -- my stats?

8 MR. LeCHER: No, no, what stats mean.

9 MR. KELLEY: Statistics -- you're graded by your
10 statistics. Supposedly, in the organization, you're not
11 graded by personality or who you know but by your
12 statistics; that's what counts. It's statistics.

13 Whatever it is that you do, say -- say, you're the
14 Director of Income, your statistics would be how much
15 money you brought in. And if that graph is going up,
16 then, you would get a liberty. If this graph was going
17 down, you'd stay on post that day.

18 There was one period when I went three months without a
19 liberty, not a day off.

20 MR. LeCHER: Three months?

21 MR. KELLEY: Maybe four, at least three.

22 MR. LeCHER: Most of this money that came in, was
23 it coming in from local people or from outside people?

24 MR. KELLEY: It was coming from outside. Much of it

1 was coming in from Europe.

2 MR. LeCHER: Much of it from Europe?

3 MR. KELLEY: Right.

4 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

5 I'd like to now give my colleagues a chance. And
6 I'll start with Mrs. Garvey to my immediate right -- far
7 right.

8 MRS. GARVEY: Mr. Kelley, I'd like to ask you to
9 expand a little bit on what were your stats? How were
10 you graded?

11 MR. KELLEY: I had a really difficult major
12 statistic, because what I did was find information. I
13 spent a lot of time in treasury. I didn't do one
14 specific thing every day. So, I roamed around and did
15 what was needed, whether it be photocopying three thou-
16 sand copies of something or whatever it was. So, I
17 just kept kind of a point value system.

18 MRS. GARVEY: For every job you did --

19 MR. KELLEY: Right.

20 MRS. GARVEY: -- you got --

21 MR. KELLEY: This was worth so many points -- it
22 was something I worked out between my superior and my-
23 self, this point value system that we had worked out.

24 MRS. GARVEY: What did you do from six-thirty to

1 ten o'clock at night? The same --

2 MR. KELLEY: Oh, no. It was varied -- for my job,
3 it varied daily.

4 I'd make a list of who -- I'd make an arrivals
5 list, who arrived, and I made a list of who was there.
6 And I distributed -- I'd type that up in four copies and
7 run that around the org. so various people around the
8 organization knew who had arrived the day before. That
9 took up most of my morning.

10 Then, in the afternoon, I would go get some photo-
11 copies or you get on the phone and you find phone numbers
12 for people to make a phone list. It would vary daily.

13 MRS. GARVEY: How many people would you record in,
14 roughly?

15 MR. KELLEY: I can remember, on weekly -- new ones?
16 It's hard to remember because, after a while, I didn't
17 count people who had made a payment of five -- fifty
18 dollars or less; I didn't add them onto my list. There
19 was a bunch of those.

20 MRS. GARVEY: What would be, say, a typical course
21 price for someone --

22 MR. KELLEY: A thousand dollars.

23 MRS. GARVEY: A thousand dollars is typical?

24 MR. KELLEY: Fifteen hundred.

1 There were courses, little courses, that were much
2 cheaper. I think the cheapest course they had when I was
3 there was \$300.00, three hundred and fifty.

4 MRS. GARVEY: Would you explain to the public what
5 a freeloader's debt is?

6 MR. KELLEY: A staff member -- for example, each
7 course that I did or each auditing action that I did, I
8 signed a promissory note: "If I do not complete my con-
9 tract, I will pay back X amount of dollars for this
10 course." Well, that stuff's all kept in a file some-
11 where and, then, when you leave -- normally, when a
12 person leaves - doesn't complete his contract - what
13 you're supposed to do is go through this rout out.

14 You're supposed to go see like ten different
15 people. And one of the things they do is they figure up
16 your freeloader's debt. They take all the courses and
17 the auditing that you've gotten -- received while you're
18 a staff member and say, "You owe us this amount." And
19 you're expected to pay it back. But it's - it's made
20 to -- it's made to seem like a legal debt. There's very
21 few people that - in my experience - ever paid their
22 freeloader debt off and came back on staff and became a
23 Scientologist in good standing.

24 MRS. GARVEY: Do most people know that it's not a

1 legal debt?

2 MR. KELLEY: I think so, because I didn't see that
3 many payments come in.

4 MRS. GARVEY: But if they had left the organization,
5 they obviously wouldn't want to pay to get back in?

6 MR. KELLEY: Not necessarily.

7 MRS. GARVEY: But you did see some payments come in?

8 MR. KELLEY: Right.

9 I know two people in North Dakota, a man and his
10 wife, and their combined freeloader debt was \$300,000.00.

11 MRS. GARVEY: Were -- did they --

12 MR. KELLEY: And they were paying it back fifteen
13 dollars a week.

14 MR. LeCHER: Until it's paid off?

15 MR. KELLEY: Yeah.

16 MR. LeCHER: Go ahead.

17 MRS. GARVEY: Would you explain to me, please, what
18 Flag Base is?

19 MR. KELLEY: When Scientology was headquartered on
20 the ship, when the Sea Org. was on the ship - I don't
21 recall - it was the Flag Ship. Scientology at that time
22 had six or seven ships, I believe. It was the Flag Ship
23 and the little fleet.

24 When they came on land, first in Orlando, they

1 became known as the Flag Land Base. It's just a -- it's
2 just another way of saying religious retreat, I guess.

3 MRS. GARVEY: Is it the central base of the
4 organization?

5 MR. KELLEY: Yes.

6 MRS. GARVEY: So, all orders would come out of the
7 Flag Base?

8 MR. KELLEY: Or else from wherever Ron was -- where
9 LRH was giving orders; it would come from him.

10 Most of the orders to the organizations come from
11 here to the West coast organization.

12 MRS. GARVEY: So, if Ron Hubbard was sending an
13 order, it would come through Clearwater Flag Base?

14 MR. KELLEY: Right, usually.

15 Most of --

16 MRS. GARVEY: So, whatever happens comes through
17 here?

18 MR. KELLEY: Right.

19 MRS. GARVEY: What got you into the organization
20 in the first place? I know we've heard some of the
21 past people talk about the leader's -- Mr. Hubbard's
22 background was so impressive that they just felt that he
23 had so much to offer that they just had to go.

24 What got you into it?

1 MR. KELLEY: That was a minor part of it for me.
2 I never really did buy this L. Ron Hubbard privilege
3 stuff. I never -- I wasn't a very good Scientologist
4 because I always had wandering doubts about Ron. You
5 know, "If he's so magnanimous, why doesn't he show up
6 and say 'Hello' once in a while?"

7 Getting back to the question: I was going to
8 college at the time when I got in. And it -- I was
9 idealistic, also, you know, I was eighteen. And I was
10 on my own for the first time. Someone said, "Hey, let's
11 go to this open house, you know, they have a seminar."
12 And I said, "Okay." We went to the seminar and I thought
13 it wasn't too bad. They had a course you could do, so
14 I did the course.

15 And it was a communications course. It was the
16 basic course that almost everyone does. And from there
17 I was hooked, but that gets us into another realm.

18 MRS. GARVEY: What did you get? I mean, did you
19 get any promises? Did you feel that they were
20 promising you something that was going to happen?

21 MR. KELLEY: I felt like things were going to be
22 a lot easier in life, you know. I felt like, "Boy,
23 Scientology is really good, for the good of the planet.
24 It's really going to help mankind."

1 You know, I joined the Sea Org. to help stamp out
2 insanity, criminal -- war and crime; insanity, war, and
3 crime. I thought that I was doing something great for
4 the human race.

5 MRS. GARVEY: Were you promised anything when you
6 joined the Sea Org.? What did they tell you was going
7 to happen to you when you joined the Sea Org., other than
8 to stamp out war and crime and insanity?

9 MR. KELLEY: That's a little vague, isn't it?

10 I'm trying to remember what my recruiter did tell
11 me.

12 MRS. GARVEY: About -- what about living conditions:
13 where you were going to be, what your work schedule was
14 going to be, what your job was?

15 MR. KELLEY: I really don't think -- I don't recall
16 them ever discussing that sort of thing because every-
17 one -- even if they would have told me, I wouldn't have
18 cared, you know, because my purpose was so -- that's what
19 I wanted to do so bad. "I'm going to Flag, wow."

20 Needless to say, I was a bit disenchanted when I
21 saw the men's dorm.

22 MRS. GARVEY: What did you expect to find at Flag?

23 MR. KELLEY: I expected to find maybe four people
24 to a room --

1 MRS. GARVEY: A college dorm-type situation?

2 MR. KELLEY: Right.

3 MRS. GARVEY: Do you know if -- you know, one of the
4 things that's promised -- or there are three things.

5 Auditing, did you do auditing?

6 MR. KELLEY: I audited and was audited.

7 MRS. GARVEY: And were you told that the auditing
8 information was going to be confidential?

9 MR. KELLEY: Yes.

10 MRS. GARVEY: Would you, in fact, have gone through
11 auditing if you had known it would be used against you
12 at a later time?

13 MR. KELLEY: No.

14 MRS. GARVEY: Were you promised a refund if you --

15 MR. KELLEY: I never paid for auditing.

16 MRS. GARVEY: You were staff; that's right.

17 MR. KELLEY: I paid for a course.

18 MRS. GARVEY: Were you -- oh -- was there any --
19 are you aware of any illnesses or mistreatment of chil-
20 dren or lack of treatment for children? Were you ever
21 in that part of the building?

22 MR. KELLEY: My wife was. Before the -- whoever is
23 in charge of that in the city, the Board of Health, who-
24 ever deals with that --

1 tion --

2 MR. KELLEY: Right. You'd still be in the Sea
3 Org. --

4 MRS. GARVEY: -- but you'd have to go someplace
5 else?

6 MR. KELLEY: Right.

7 MRS. GARVEY: Why is that?

8 MR. KELLEY: Because there was no room in the
9 nursery for any additional children.

10 MRS. GARVEY: But there were in the other areas?

11 MR. KELLEY: Right.

12 MRS. GARVEY: Did you ever keep track of the news
13 in the area? You know, did you read the newspaper or
14 listen to radio or television?

15 MR. KELLEY: We were kind of discouraged from
16 reading the Clearwater Sun for obvious reasons.

17 MRS. GARVEY: Did you keep track of --

18 MR. KELLEY: We really didn't care. It wasn't
19 important to us. It wasn't.

20 MRS. GARVEY: Fine.

21 What were you told about the Guardian Office?

22 MR. KELLEY: That they made the environment safe
23 for Scientology to expand. That's their purpose, so
24 we were told.

1 exempt number. Did you have any knowledge --

2 MR. KELLEY: I had none.

3 MR. HATCHETT: None.

4 MR. KELLEY: I never filed a tax return when I was
5 here.

6 MR. HATCHETT: I beg your pardon?

7 MR. KELLEY: I never filed a tax form when I lived
8 here.

9 MR. HATCHETT: I'm talking about the organization
10 itself.

11 MR. KELLEY: I have no idea what their tax --

12 MR. HATCHETT: Were you aware -- did they ever have
13 an IRS --

14 MR. KELLEY: I knew they were tax exempt, but I
15 had no idea what the specifics were.

16 MR. HATCHETT: Well, those thirty to forty bank
17 accounts in the Pinellas County area, were they actually
18 in the Church of Scientology's name?

19 MR. KELLEY: To my knowledge, they were. They
20 weren't all in the Pinellas County area. They had banks
21 in Tampa, around the area.

22 MR. HATCHETT: Who normally made those deposits
23 by name?

24 MR. KELLEY: He was the Finance Banking Officer;

1 of money.

2 MR. SHOEMAKER: Yes, sir.

3 But who actually did the regging and what did they
4 do?

5 MR. KELLEY: They -- what they would do is they
6 would -- say, you were on the eastern United States
7 tour, they'd have an advance man -- say, your next stop
8 was Boston. The advance man would go to Boston, book
9 the hall, you know --

10 MR. SHOEMAKER: This is for information --

11 MR. KELLEY: Right.

12 He'd make a reservation for a place to hold the
13 event, you know, it's for thousands of people. He would
14 get a place in the local org. for the registrars to
15 work, a phone, and the local org. would provide
16 assistance.

17 MR. SHOEMAKER: So, regging relates to the
18 registrar?

19 MR. KELLEY: Right.

20 MR. SHOEMAKER: Which is the person that takes in
21 money --

22 MR. KELLEY: Takes in money.

23 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- and does the recruiting for --

24 MR. KELLEY: Right.

1 knowledgeable with the words.

2 A Class 12 auditor --

3 MR. KELLEY: Oh.

4 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- is that somebody --

5 MR. KELLEY: That's the highest stage you can get.

6 MR. SHOEMAKER: That's the highest level you can
7 get?

8 MR. KELLEY: The only place -- a regular organiza-
9 tion is a Class 4 organization, and you can only train
10 up to Class 4 auditors. And there's, I think, three
11 organizations where they are Class 9 organizations. And
12 Flag is a Class 12 organization. They're the only place
13 that has a Class 12 auditor.

14 MR. SHOEMAKER: And that relates directly to the
15 level of training --

16 MR. KELLEY: Right.

17 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- that a person --

18 MR. KELLEY: That's a highly, highly trained --

19 MR. LeCHER: In Clearwater?

20 MR. KELLEY: That's done here, right. The only
21 place you can do it is here.

22 Anyway, they send one of these people out - someone
23 of that nature - and they would do the speaking. They
24 would do the actual speaking at the event, you know, do

1 the invoice machine and a calculator.

2 MR. SHOEMAKER: During this process, did types of --
3 were they promising things to people in terms of --
4 regarding physical or mental corrections or saving of the
5 world or what?

6 MR. KELLEY: Not so much that at a regular -- at a
7 regular event. Those were done more at recruiting events
8 when they try to get staff members. They'd talk about
9 helping planet Earth.

10 MR. SHOEMAKER: Were they -- they would talk about
11 helping the planet and so forth?

12 MR. KELLEY: Yes.

13 MR. SHOEMAKER: What type of image were they
14 placing forward regarding Mr. Hubbard?

15 MR. KELLEY: Oh, like he was the greatest thing
16 since -- that he was just flawless. And that's a --
17 every time we'd have a staff meeting here at Flag, at
18 the end of it, we'd applaud Ron. You'd always stand up
19 and give Ron a standing ovation because he's done this
20 great thing for you.

21 MR. SHOEMAKER: Did you ever see or meet Mr.
22 Hubbard at --

23 MR. KELLEY: No.

24 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- all?

1 MR. SHOEMAKER: And that came directly back to
2 Clearwater?

3 MR. KELLEY: Right.

4 Did -- no. The Europe one, the money doesn't go
5 directly back, and I don't know where that money goes.
6 No one -- that's a highly kept secret.

7 MR. SHOEMAKER: Oh, it is?

8 MR. KELLEY: That's highly kept.

9 MR. SHOEMAKER: But yet, you did indicate there
10 were a lot of Europeans that came to --

11 MR. KELLEY: Right.

12 MR. SHOEMAKER: Clearwater?

13 MR. KELLEY: All we get is a little piece of typed
14 paper. They're called "Central Files Information Slips,"
15 and it's a little strip of paper that tells what the
16 payment was, what it was for, and the person's address.
17 It says everything on it the invoice does, but the money
18 didn't come here. And no one knows where -- there's --
19 that's very -- a highly kept secret, highly kept secret
20 where that person is. I don't know where that is.

21 MR. SHOEMAKER: During your process -- well, first
22 of all, can you describe to us what a Suppressive Person
23 is?

24 MR. KELLEY: Anyone that has -- wants to harm

1 MR. KELLEY: Right.

2 They use symbols -- you just don't talk about bad
3 news, things bad that happen.

4 For example, when that lady Scientologist committed
5 suicide, you didn't talk about that stuff. That was --
6 that was just -- it wasn't positive; it didn't have a
7 purpose.

8 MR. SHOEMAKER: So, that would be included in any
9 types of news stories or any type --

10 MR. KELLEY: Oh, right.

11 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- of events outside that were --

12 MR. KELLEY: Certainly.

13 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- you wouldn't talk about, as well
14 as personal things?

15 MR. KELLEY: Right.

16 You didn't talk about your Mom dying or you didn't
17 talk about the Clearwater Sun, for example. I keep --
18 I don't mean to keep picking on the Clearwater Sun.

19 MR. SHOEMAKER: No. I'm sure they're enjoying it.

20 For instance, the RPF, you wouldn't talk about if
21 somebody, a friend of yours --

22 MR. KELLEY: No.

23 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- was in it?

24 MR. KELLEY: Oh, no.

1 MR. SHOEMAKER: You have nine folders?

2 MR. KELLEY: Yes.

3 MR. SHOEMAKER: In three years?

4 MR. KELLEY: Right.

5 MR. SHOEMAKER: Could you compare it to, say,
6 weekly, how frequently you went through with an auditing
7 session?

8 MR. KELLEY: It's hard to say because for several
9 months you wouldn't get -- you wouldn't receive any
10 auditing; then, you received a whole bunch in a matter
11 of weeks.

12 MR. SHOEMAKER: Why?

13 MR. KELLEY: Usually, just the luck of the draw.
14 Staff members didn't have a real high priority on being
15 audited.

16 Obviously, the first job here in Clearwater is to
17 deliver to the public, paying customers, and then, to
18 us, the working class. And the higher up in the organiza-
19 tion you are, the more likely you were to get auditing.

20 MR. SHOEMAKER: Why?

21 MR. KELLEY: This is the reward basis.

22 MR. SHOEMAKER: So, the auditing was a reward --

23 MR. KELLEY: Oh, sure. Right.

24 You're -- when you're on staff, you get -- you're

1 got through with their minister's course and got ordained.

2 MR. SHOEMAKER: And that course took you -- nor-
3 mally, how long did it take?

4 MR. KELLEY: About four or five weeks.

5 MR. SHOEMAKER: Four or five weeks --

6 MR. KELLEY: Right.

7 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- to become an ordained minister?

8 MR. KELLEY: Right.

9 MR. SHOEMAKER: Are you familiar with the Fair
10 Game Doctrine?

11 MR. KELLEY: I've heard of it, but they've always
12 said they denied it.

13 MR. SHOEMAKER: What was the general consensus
14 of --

15 MR. KELLEY: Well, the staff members, they feel
16 it's been cancelled.

17 MR. SHOEMAKER: They feel it has been cancelled?

18 MR. KELLEY: Right.

19 And the other people that don't feel it's been
20 cancelled is the GO.

21 MR. SHOEMAKER: What's the Fair Game Doctrine?

22 MR. KELLEY: Well, it's if you get out; you're
23 fair game.

24 MR. SHOEMAKER: What does that mean to you?

1 MR. KELLEY: Basically, what it says. It's like:
2 "If you're not with us, you're totally against us."

3 MR. SHOEMAKER: And what is allowed to occur to
4 those of you that are totally against or --

5 MR. KELLEY: It depends on how against they are.
6 If they're vehemently and loudly against Scientology,
7 making noise about it, then, the Fair Game Policy says
8 that you go get them, that you discredit them, et cetera,
9 et cetera.

10 MR. SHOEMAKER: What kinds of means can you use
11 to do that?

12 MR. KELLEY: I don't know; I wasn't in the GO. I
13 don't want to get into my supposition stages; I don't
14 know.

15 MR. SHOEMAKER: I -- if I might ask --

16 MR. KELLEY: Just things that I've read or things
17 that I'm familiar with: the normal phone calls, can-
18 celling flights, and --

19 MR. SHOEMAKER: So, you're speaking, basically,
20 about --

21 MR. KELLEY: Just on hearsay information, just
22 on information that I have heard from others.

23 MR. SHOEMAKER: Yes, sir, I understand. You're
24 not -- you haven't been involved in it.

1 MR. KELLEY: Well, I have.

2 MR. SHOEMAKER: Oh, you have?

3 MR. CALDERBANK: People who don't pay the money?

4 MRS. GARVEY: No.

5 MR. KELLEY: No. The incident with my sister-in-
6 law that I stated yesterday. I look -- I guess I was
7 fair game -- well, my brother was fair game, actually.

8 MR. SHOEMAKER: But the -- any type of general
9 harrassment -- would you say that this was -- although
10 the average Scientologist said this, did you believe
11 that this occurred until the --

12 MR. KELLEY: No.

13 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- this incident that happened
14 to --

15 MR. KELLEY: No.

16 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- your sister-in-law?

17 MR. KELLEY: No.

18 MR. SHOEMAKER: You did not?

19 MR. KELLEY: No. The average Scientologist doesn't
20 know that sort of thing goes on. He has no idea. He
21 just thinks it's just something that the papers make up
22 to sell papers.

23 MR. SHOEMAKER: Would you say that the -- to the
24 best of your knowledge, that the situations which you've

1 described are probably still going on now or --

2 MR. KELLEY: I'd be very amazed if they weren't
3 still happening. I know the men's dorm is no longer
4 in effect. They don't have -- they just turned that into
5 an office.

6 MR. SHOEMAKER: One other question: Mr. Kelley,
7 I noticed today coming in there's a big sign out.
8 Initially, there was a big sign on the Fort Harrison
9 which said that it was open to the public two p.m. on
10 Sunday.

11 MR. KELLEY: Right.

12 MR. SHOEMAKER: Now, there's a big sign that says,
13 "Open House from nine a.m. to nine p.m. today," which,
14 I guess, is a plug that I just gave.

15 Would you expect this to be a normal type of a
16 response, based upon some type of a public inquiry
17 being made into the Church or --

18 MR. KELLEY: Yes.

19 That's what we did when Mr. Tenney was leading
20 his pomp against Scientologists. When he started making
21 a lot of noise, then, they opened their doors.

22 I used to be a security guard at the front desk
23 at the Fort Harrison, also.

24 MR. SHOEMAKER: I know that there were a lot of

1 lights on last night when we went home.

2 MR. KELLEY: They were probably cleaning the place
3 up.

4 MRS. GARVEY: Cleaning the place up?

5 MR. KELLEY: Well, you know, making it really
6 shine in the public areas.

7 MR. SHOEMAKER: Thank you.

8 MR. LeCHER: When you were a security guard, what
9 did you do as a security guard?

10 MR. KELLEY: Sat at the front desk at the Fort
11 Harrison and just allowed no loonies to walk in,
12 basically.

13 MR. LeCHER: What if a loony walked in, what
14 would you do and --

15 MR. KELLEY: Normally, help him walk out.

16 MR. LeCHER: Did you have a gun or billy --

17 MR. KELLEY: No, no. You got -- there was a club
18 if you ever used it.

19 You just sat there and -- no, there is no guns at
20 Fort Harrison, but there's a little -- there's a night-
21 stick there, but no one ever uses it. That I know of,
22 there was no guns.

23 MR. LeCHER: There was a directive -- about Fair
24 Game, did you ever see a directive that the Fair Game

1 potential for divorce is always so great?

2 MR. KELLEY: I honestly do not know. I think -- I
3 have an idea that a friend of mine -- that's the way he
4 did his. But I have -- I have no concrete information
5 on that.

6 That's the kind of thing you didn't really -- until
7 Al had done it to me, I didn't have any idea that that
8 was even possible. And that wasn't too long before I
9 got out of Scientology.

10 MR. LeCHER: As a minister, were you able to marry
11 people?

12 MR. KELLEY: Certainly. I never did, because I
13 was too nervous in front of other people.

14 The marriage -- the Scientology marriage ceremony
15 isn't bad; it's rather -- it's a nice little ceremony,
16 but I wouldn't have been able to do one.

17 MR. LeCHER: I was curious as to how many real
18 marriages there are.

19 The Sea Org.: Now, what is it, how does it
20 function, who is in charge, when were you there, and
21 what did you find?

22 MR. KELLEY: The Sea Org. is the overall, more or
23 less, fraternal organization. It stands for Sea Organi-
24 zation. When Scientology -- when Ron was on the ship,

1 MR. KELLEY: There's Captain Bill. There's rank
2 in the Sea Org., also.

3 MR. LeCHER: Captain Bill?

4 MR. KELLEY: Yes.

5 There's rank. You start as swamper, you go to petty
6 officer, you go to chief, you go to warrant officer,
7 ensign, lieutenant, NJ -- it's like in the Navy.

8 MR. LeCHER: What were you?

9 MR. KELLEY: Swamper. I never --

10 MR. LeCHER: Swamper?

11 MR. KELLEY: I never made it to petty officer,
12 third class. I never went to study.

13 Part of the things -- one of the things that -- one
14 of the requirements for -- to be selected was you had to
15 go to course, you had to study. And I never did. The
16 only time I ever did was when I was doing the minister's
17 course.

18 MR. LeCHER: How could a swamper or someone that --
19 someone as young as you, be entrusted to handle so much
20 money?

21 MR. KELLEY: I didn't handle it, actually; I just
22 looked at it. No, seriously, I didn't -- all I did was
23 handle invoices. I wrote some invoices, but I had -- the
24 actual money itself, the checks and the cash, very few

1 people handled that, very few.

2 I was -- I handled the invoices.

3 There are people that were younger than I am in
4 positions of much greater responsibility, much greater
5 and much younger: twelve, thirteen, you know.

6 MR. LeCHER: Twelve or thirteen years old?

7 MR. KELLEY: Right, Commodore's Messenger Organiza-
8 tion. He's got a small army of them.

9 MR. LeCHER: An army of twelve- or thirteen-year
10 olds?

11 MR. KELLEY: Oh -- or younger, ten, maybe. Ten
12 might be the youngest.

13 MR. LeCHER: All right.

14 Tell me about the messengers. Are they messengers
15 or are they army?

16 MR. KELLEY: They're messengers. They're children
17 that --

18 MR. LeCHER: Army of messengers?

19 MR. KELLEY: No -- well, I said small army.

20 MR. LeCHER: Are they like pages?

21 MR. KELLEY: They're a -- sometimes. And sometimes
22 they're like the executives. A lot of them do execu-
23 tive -- some of the -- most of the younger ones don't
24 have positions of vast authority, but if one of them had

1 told me what to do, I would have said, "Yes, sir."

2 MR. LeCHER: He would have --

3 MR. KELLEY: Right.

4 MR. LeCHER: What is the CMO?

5 MR. KELLEY: Commodore's Messenger Org.

6 MR. LeCHER: And that's what we're talking about
7 now?

8 MR. KELLEY: Right.

9 They're the guys with the blue lanyards.

10 MR. LeCHER: The blue manuals?

11 MR. KELLEY: Lanyards.

12 MR. LeCHER: Lanyards, oh. They're walking -- I've
13 seen them.

14 MR. KELLEY: If you see one with just blue in it,
15 that's probably someone in the Commodore's Messenger
16 Organization.

17 MR. LeCHER: Probably.

18 MR. KELLEY: Then, there's -- the blue lanyard
19 means Ron's personal staff.

20 MR. LeCHER: Ron's personal staff?

21 MR. KELLEY: Right.

22 MR. LeCHER: They would handle -- they're the ones
23 that handle most of the money?

24 MR. KELLEY: No.

1 MRS. GARVEY: No, no.

2 MR. KELLEY: No, no, I didn't say that.

3 The ones that handle most of the money are the
4 treasury personnel, the Director of Income, the Treasury
5 Secretary. At the level I was at, you know, we're --
6 like I said, European money goes somewhere -- I have no
7 idea where it is. Who knows who handles that money?

8 MR. LeCHER: What is -- are there many members of
9 Ron's personal staff in Clearwater?

10 MR. KELLEY: I would guess around a hundred.

11 MR. LeCHER: What is their -- why does Ron need
12 that hundred people in Clearwater? What is their main
13 function?

14 MR. KELLEY: To keep an eye on the Clearwater
15 operation.

16 MR. LeCHER: To keep an eye on you or me?

17 MR. KELLEY: No. To keep an eye on --

18 MR. LeCHER: On the money?

19 MR. KELLEY: On the money and the technical delivery
20 and the management organization. To keep an eye on
21 everything.

22 They also do what are called missions. They will
23 come into your area and almost take it over, like if
24 your area or your office was doing -- the Commodore's

1 Messenger Organization would come in on a mission and
2 investigate, find out why things have gone downhill.

3 MR. BERFIELD: Is this like a Gestapo?

4 MR. KELLEY: They're not very pleasant people to
5 deal with. That's the way I always felt about -- I
6 only had one mission in my time there in my area, and it
7 was not a pleasant experience.

8 MR. LeCHER: What happens if you fall in disfavor
9 with a CMO member?

10 MR. KELLEY: You'll soon find yourself in a blue
11 tee shirt scrubbing a garage, usually. Those -- those
12 guys don't mess around. They will -- I was told point
13 blank once: "One more" --

14 MR. LeCHER: Threats.

15 Sir, I'm sorry. Will you give me your experience
16 with the CMO.

17 MR. KELLEY: They're just -- one thing was when
18 I was going -- when I had a CMO mission in my area, it
19 was originally thought that I was the reason for the
20 entire organization's downfall. The entire organiza-
21 tion's statistics were on a downward slide, and they
22 originally thought it was from me because I had --
23 wasn't giving accurate information. So, I was in a lot
24 of heat from everybody. And this was also the time of

1 great emotional stress with my wife.

2 And Frank had told me that I had to make a choice.
3 I had to tell my wife either stay or go, but he wanted
4 me to go tell her one thing or the other right then and
5 report back to him, because it was weighing too heavily
6 on me; it was taking my attention away from my job.

7 MR. LeCHER: You mean, the CMO --

8 MR. KELLEY: Mr. Freedman was his name.

9 MRS. GARVEY: Frank Freedman?

10 MR. KELLEY: Right.

11 MR. LeCHER: He said, "You either control your wife and
12 your personal life," like stay with your wife or not
13 stay with your wife?

14 MR. KELLEY: He did that time.

15 MR. LeCHER: All for the good of the CMO?

16 MR. KELLEY: Right. Well, all for the good of the
17 organization because it was pulling me away from my post.
18 It was causing too much attention.

19 MR. LeCHER: Did anyone ever live in the garage?

20 MR. KELLEY: Yeah, the RPF did.

21 MR. LeCHER: The RPF?

22 MR. KELLEY: Right, the Rehabilitation Project
23 Force.

24 MR. LeCHER: What were conditions like in the

1 garage?

2 MR. KELLEY: They weren't a whole lot better
3 than they were in the men's dorm. Three-high bunks
4 and -- there wasn't much need for air conditioning, but
5 it was -- I was only in there a couple of times, and
6 it was, you know, bare walls, concrete walls, plywood
7 on one side, plywood walls.

8 MR. LeCHER: Did you personally see this?

9 MR. KELLEY: Yes.

10 MR. LeCHER: And you lived there for --

11 MR. KELLEY: No.

12 MR. LeCHER: -- a short time?

13 MR. KELLEY: Yes -- no, I never lived inside that;
14 I was never in the RPF.

15 MR. LeCHER: But there were people that lived in
16 a garage?

17 MR. KELLEY: Right.

18 MR. LeCHER: Did you live in the garage?

19 MR. KELLEY: No. I was never in the RPF.

20 MR. LeCHER: You were never in the RPF.

21 MR. KELLEY: Right. I never got into trouble.

22 MR. LeCHER: But you did see firsthand knowledge
23 that --

24 MR. KELLEY: Those conditions did exist.

1 MR. LeCHER: -- those conditions did exist?

2 Do you think they still do?

3 MR. KELLEY: I'm almost positive of it.

4 MR. LeCHER: What do you think: If I left this
5 meeting on our break and went down to the Open House for
6 Scientology, would I be treated warmly?

7 MR. KELLEY: You would be treated with complete
8 terror on first walking in. And then, once they got
9 someone to talk to you -- the security guard would have
10 some kind of an attack, I'm sure: "My God, the Mayor's
11 here."

12 And then, when he got someone that was more capable
13 or qualified or that was their job, they would show you
14 around. They'd show you the chapel; they'd show you the
15 classroom upstairs, the lobby, you know, these real
16 innocuous things. You know, they won't show you some
17 of the more grisly conditions, you know, say, a crowded
18 dormitory room or, heaven forbid, the RPF auditing room,
19 or --

20 MRS. GARVEY: What's the RPF auditing room?

21 MR. KELLEY: -- the -- anything else, you know.

22 They'll just show you this, you know, nice,
23 clean --

24 MR. LeCHER: What is the RPF auditing room? Mrs.

1 Garvey was thinking out loud. What really is the RPF
2 auditing room? I'd like to know, too.

3 MR. KELLEY: Just a big room in the garage where
4 they do their auditing.

5 Normally, auditing is done in a private room. But
6 in the RPF, you've got four or five guys auditing in the
7 same room.

8 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

9 We are running out of time and I want to get to
10 Mr. Berfield and Mr. Calderbank and give them some time,
11 so I will give it to Mr. Berfield -- Mr. Calderbank,
12 and if he wants to follow up on CMO and the hundred men --
13 people here and anything about the disquieting effect
14 they have on the City of Clearwater.

15 MR. CALDERBANK: Casey, you were given specific
16 money for a job, eight-sixty a week, then, seventeen-
17 twenty per week?

18 MR. KELLEY: Right. And then, it went up to \$20.00
19 a week.

20 MR. CALDERBANK: Did you have hours, specific
21 hours you had for work?

22 MR. KELLEY: There was a muster that I was supposed
23 to attend.

24 MR. CALDERBANK: That they required?

1 MR. KELLEY: Right. It was right after breakfast,
2 right after meals.

3 MR. CALDERBANK: Did you ever sign any -- did you
4 ever see a W-2 form?

5 MR. KELLEY: Yeah, when I first came on staff.

6 MR. CALDERBANK: Did you sign it?

7 MR. KELLEY: As far as I know, I did.

8 MR. CALDERBANK: Did you ever give a social security
9 number or a waiver for your salary?

10 MR. KELLEY: I'm trying to remember if I -- I'm
11 sure I did; I must have, because that's on the W-2 form,
12 isn't it?

13 I know I never filed a tax form.

14 MR. CALDERBANK: Did you file a waiver for that --

15 MR. KELLEY: I don't think so.

16 MR. CALDERBANK: When you -- when you did the paper-
17 work, you said you saw almost all the invoices?

18 MR. KELLEY: All of the invoices.

19 MR. CALDERBANK: All of them?

20 MR. KELLEY: All of them.

21 MR. CALDERBANK: Did you ever see any invoices for,
22 say, private interests?

23 MR. KELLEY: For a business?

24 MR. CALDERBANK: Yes.

1 MR. KELLEY: On occasion. I'm trying -- I've been
2 trying to remember for the last two days what they
3 were, though. I remember one in Los Angeles.

4 Mostly people paid in their own names. There was
5 a couple of smaller businesses that were owned by
6 Scientologists, but they had their own account for the
7 business.

8 MR. CALDERBANK: In the Church?

9 MR. KELLEY: Right.

10 MR. CALDERBANK: And they owned this business as
11 a private individual?

12 MR. KELLEY: Right.

13 MR. CALDERBANK: Okay.

14 MR. KELLEY: And they would have these documents
15 on them.

16 MR. CALDERBANK: Do you know that for a fact?

17 MR. KELLEY: Yes.

18 MR. CALDERBANK: Can you give me a name?

19 MR. LeCHER: We're not really -- I've been advised
20 not to have you give names because that --

21 MR. CALDERBANK: Did you have personal experience
22 with that?

23 MR. KELLEY: Yes.

24 MR. CALDERBANK: Okay.

1 MR. LeCHER: It may be objectionable to some
2 people.

3 MR. CALDERBANK: Right.

4 Someone else -- or you mentioned, also, that you
5 had a person prior to you that falsified statistics?

6 MR. KELLEY: Yes.

7 MR. CALDERBANK: Is that a widespread practice on
8 an --

9 MR. KELLEY: Not after him.

10 MR. CALDERBANK: Are there checks?

11 MR. KELLEY: Huh?

12 MR. CALDERBANK: Are there any checks implemented
13 now to --

14 MR. KELLEY: Right.

15 MR. CALDERBANK: -- to see if anyone is falsifying
16 statistics?

17 MR. KELLEY: There is on the income statistics.
18 It's still very easy to falsify a statistic, but that's
19 a high crime. That's -- you'd be in a major amount of
20 trouble for falsifying --

21 MR. CALDERBANK: Would it be a high crime to
22 falsify to an outside government?

23 MR. KELLEY: Oh. It would be a high crime to
24 falsify to Scientology let alone someone outside the

1 organization.

2 MR. CALDERBANK: What about the money -- you said
3 you had thirty bank accounts in many different --

4 MR. KELLEY: Thirty's a rough guess.

5 MR. CALDERBANK: About -- in many different
6 accounts within the Church.

7 Were any specifically in the GO office?

8 MR. KELLEY: Yes.

9 MR. CALDERBANK: Could you trace any -- you've
10 heard of activities in the GO that could be considered
11 criminal in nature.

12 MR. KELLEY: Right.

13 MR. CALDERBANK: Did you ever see any invoices,
14 specifically --

15 MR. KELLEY: No.

16 MR. CALDERBANK: -- lining that up?

17 MR. KELLEY: No. The invoices that I saw were all
18 money coming in.

19 MR. CALDERBANK: Okay.

20 MR. KELLEY: I didn't see any money going out.

21 MR. CALDERBANK: Was there any way you could have
22 been able to tell, just by the records that you had,
23 whether or not the money was going for those types of
24 activities?

1 MR. KELLEY: No.

2 MR. CALDERBANK: Are there other buildings outside
3 of Clearwater that Scientology owns?

4 MR. KELLEY: Well, there are --

5 MR. CALDERBANK: Others --

6 MR. KELLEY: Well, there's orgs. -- there's --
7 they own buildings around the world.

8 MR. CALDERBANK: Are they used by private
9 individuals?

10 MR. KELLEY: Not to my knowledge.

11 MR. CALDERBANK: All right.

12 You talked about the money and investment, and
13 you used the specific word "invest."

14 Do you remember that when you talked --

15 MR. KELLEY: Right.

16 MR. CALDERBANK: -- about gold?

17 MR. KELLEY: Right.

18 MR. CALDERBANK: Is that when gold was going up?

19 MR. KELLEY: That was a very vague conversation,
20 so that's why I was very vague yesterday. It was men-
21 tioned in passing in an office that I was in.

22 MR. CALDERBANK: Do you remember the name of the
23 person that mentioned it?

24 MR. KELLEY: Mr. Shomer.

1 MR. CALDERBANK: Mr. Shomer.

2 He talked about, perhaps, buying gold when it was
3 on its way up?

4 MR. KELLEY: Right, because he made a small -- he
5 makes personal money on it.

6 MR. CALDERBANK: He made personal money on it?

7 MR. KELLEY: Yes. Out of his own personal funds,
8 he bought some silver or something and he sold it later
9 at a much higher price.

10 MR. CALDERBANK: Okay.

11 Do you have any idea of whether or not the money
12 that comes into the Church is used in this type of
13 investment?

14 MR. KELLEY: I have no idea if it -- I don't --

15 MR. CALDERBANK: But it was talked about?

16 MR. KELLEY: It was discussed.

17 MR. CALDERBANK: Okay.

18 When you talked, also, about people as Mr. Hagen
19 in Europe, you mentioned that --

20 MR. KELLEY: Hegetschweiler.

21 MR. CALDERBANK: Hegetschweiler.

22 You talked about bonuses, percentages, you talked
23 about commissions.

24 MR. KELLEY: Right.

1 MR. CALDERBANK: There were certain specific
2 commissions for services rendered?

3 MR. KELLEY: Right.

4 MR. CALDERBANK: And you always called them
5 services, correct?

6 MR. KELLEY: Right.

7 MR. CALDERBANK: And there was specific money paid
8 for specific services?

9 MR. KELLEY: Right.

10 MR. CALDERBANK: Specific hours?

11 MR. KELLEY: Right.

12 MR. CALDERBANK: Okay.

13 And --

14 MR. KELLEY: Sometimes specific auditors, too.

15 MR. CALDERBANK: -- money -- specific auditors,
16 too?

17 MR. KELLEY: Sometimes.

18 MR. CALDERBANK: Fulfilling their task within the
19 organization?

20 MR. KELLEY: Right.

21 MR. CALDERBANK: Did they receive commissions,
22 also?

23 MR. KELLEY: Registrars usually -- I can't remember
24 what the percentage was. Those people made decent money.

1 MR. CALDERBANK: Were any of these people registered
2 with the state who were taking commissions?

3 MR. KELLEY: Not to my knowledge.

4 MR. CALDERBANK: When -- if there were potential
5 problems, do you think anyone that would want to see
6 the flow of money either coming in or going out of the
7 Church, do you think that would, in your own personal
8 opinion -- would that stop any person, his being able to
9 participate in the activities of Scientology?

10 MR. KELLEY: Can you rephrase that and say it
11 again?

12 MR. CALDERBANK: It's hard to rephrase.

13 MR. LeCHER: Well, say it again so he understands
14 what he's going to say.

15 MR. CALDERBANK: If those invoices were made public
16 that you saw going across your desk every day --

17 MR. KELLEY: Right.

18 MR. CALDERBANK: -- and if the people that were
19 giving the money in checks, the registrars --

20 MR. KELLEY: Right.

21 MR. CALDERBANK: -- if those were tallied and were
22 available - which you did, you said four or five hundred
23 thousand dollars - if those were tallied and those were
24 available or in a statement form, would that prevent

1 anybody that paid the money from obtaining the services?

2 MR. KELLEY: No.

3 MR. CALDERBANK: You don't think it would stop
4 them from participating in what they paid for?

5 MR. KELLEY: No. Once they paid -- let me see if
6 I get you right, if I understand.

7 MR. CALDERBANK: I'm asking if people that
8 donated --

9 MR. KELLEY: They always get that service. That's
10 unless for some reason they didn't want to do that
11 specific service; they could do another service.

12 MR. CALDERBANK: So, basically, the question is:
13 Tracing that money won't stop people from getting the
14 services?

15 MR. KELLEY: Right.

16 The money is -- the money is -- the accounting isn't
17 too bad, it's usually fairly accurate.

18 MR. CALDERBANK: And it wouldn't stop them from
19 enjoying what they find in Scientology?

20 MR. KELLEY: Right.

21 How would it -- wait a minute. How would it stop
22 them, because it's just money that they've paid, right?

23 MR. CALDERBANK: I wanted to ask you because you
24 are the first witness that has the most intimate --

1 MR. KELLEY: It's like --

2 MR. CALDERBANK: -- knowledge about the money --

3 MR. KELLEY: It's like buying -- like paying for
4 a room in a hotel, you know. You get an invoice and,
5 then, you go ahead and stay in the hotel.

6 MR. CALDERBANK: Why do you keep referring to it
7 as services?

8 MR. KELLEY: That's what they're called.

9 MR. CALDERBANK: Was anyone ever given --

10 MR. KELLEY: It's a service --

11 MR. CALDERBANK: Right.

12 MR. KELLEY: -- as opposed to goods and services;
13 it's a service.

14 MR. CALDERBANK: Have you ever seen anyone get a
15 service for less than going price?

16 MR. KELLEY: No. That was not allowed.

17 MR. CALDERBANK: Was it ever --

18 MR. KELLEY: It's a flat rate and that's what you
19 paid. You could get a five percent discount for going --
20 for paying early. Five percent? I think it was five
21 percent; it could have been ten.

22 MR. CALDERBANK: Okay.

23 When you were talking about auditing, you said
24 that people would be stopped half way through if they

1 paid, like, say, twenty thousand; that's the number you
2 used --

3 MR. KELLEY: Right.

4 MR. CALDERBANK: And did you say that they had been
5 told -- or have you ever heard it as a policy that with-
6 out further auditing they may become ill?

7 MR. KELLEY: That happened. That was a common
8 technique.

9 MR. CALDERBANK: That was a common technique,
10 telling someone they would get ill?

11 MR. KELLEY: If -- it was -- if they were in the
12 middle of an auditing action. Let's say you paid for,
13 let's say, twenty-five hours to complete such and such
14 a rundown, and you got to the end of that twenty-five
15 hours and you still hadn't finished, that was the common
16 technique: "You're going to get sick if you don't finish
17 this," you know. So, you have to buy --

18 MR. CALDERBANK: If you don't finish it, you have
19 to buy --

20 MR. KELLEY: You have to buy another intensive;
21 you have to buy another twelve and-a-half hours.

22 MR. CALDERBANK: What about the waivers that you
23 signed? They were actual -- they told you that they would
24 stand up in a court of law and they were acceptable?

1 MR. KELLEY: No, I was never told that. But, boy,
2 they sure looked -- they looked legal. I mean, "Where-
3 as" -- you know, they had legal terminology.

4 MR. CALDERBANK: Did that make you feel that if you
5 left you could be sued for the money on the freeloader's
6 debt or whatever?

7 MR. KELLEY: Nobody reads them. They didn't.

8 One of the things that you sign -- when you do a
9 course, you sign a promissory note and an invoice; that's
10 staff members. You never read that stuff because you're
11 usually in a hurry to go start the course.

12 MR. CALDERBANK: Did you think it was legal at the
13 time you did it?

14 MR. KELLEY: I didn't know. It looked it. It
15 looked pretty legal.

16 MR. CALDERBANK: Okay.

17 Then, the last area: Since you saw the invoices,
18 did you see any invoices for textbooks, say, Calculus,
19 Biology --

20 MR. KELLEY: Never.

21 MR. CALDERBANK: No textbooks?

22 MR. KELLEY: Never. Once in a while a dictionary.
23 They sold dictionaries in the bookstore.

24 MR. CALDERBANK: So you never saw, say, regular

1 schoolbooks for children ever purchased from the Church
2 fund?

3 MR. KELLEY: That -- again, that's money going out.

4 MR. CALDERBANK: Yes. But the company would bill
5 you with an invoice, wouldn't they?

6 MR. KELLEY: Yes. But that was still -- that was
7 money going out. I wouldn't see that.

8 MR. CALDERBANK: And you never saw money spent
9 for fire extinguishers, extinguisher --

10 MR. KELLEY: I know that -- I know that that sort
11 of -- I know -- I think they're legal on that sort of
12 thing. I know the Clearwater building is because the
13 lights have gone out a few times, those little lights
14 they have over the entranceways. Those go on --

15 MR. CALDERBANK: Did you ever see money leave the
16 Church to perform any of those functions?

17 MR. KELLEY: I never saw money leave the Church.
18 That's a different -- see, the place I spent most of my
19 time was in the other part of the -- which is the income,
20 the Director of Income.

21 MR. CALDERBANK: Okay.

22 MR. KELLEY: And the place the money went out from
23 was the disbursement end. It was just -- it was in
24 another building, another office.

1 MR. CALDERBANK: And my last question is: You
2 mentioned that you had gotten food poisoning.

3 MR. KELLEY: Right.

4 MR. CALDERBANK: A few times?

5 MR. KELLEY: Two or three.

6 MR. CALDERBANK: Two or three?

7 MR. KELLEY: Right.

8 MR. CALDERBANK: Where had you eaten that food?

9 MR. KELLEY: In the -- in a room in the Clearwater
10 building and in the Fort Harrison building.

11 MR. CALDERBANK: Was that --

12 MR. KELLEY: That was fairly -- that happened --

13 MR. CALDERBANK: -- common?

14 MR. KELLEY: Yes. When somebody would get it,
15 usually, a few people got it. And you went to sick
16 bay and they gave you some vitamins and you went to bed.
17 That's usually what I did. I just would sleep. I'd
18 be all right in a day or two.

19 MR. CALDERBANK: No further questions.

20 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Berfield.

21 MR. BERFIELD: Mr. Mayor, if you will recall, I
22 started this off yesterday, but I did have a couple of
23 questions that I didn't get a chance to ask.

24 Mr. Kelley, there seems to be a thread running

1 through here of vagueness in names. Is that because of
2 a part --

3 MR. KELLEY: No. It's an unwillingness to give
4 names. I can give you names, addresses.

5 MR. BERFIELD: You mean, if we ask for the names
6 and the addresses, they are available to us?

7 MR. KELLEY: Certainly. I can give you names.

8 MR. BERFIELD: Okay.

9 The other situation is that you keep referring to -
10 in Mr. Calderbank's questioning here - the money going
11 out.

12 MR. KELLEY: Right.

13 MR. BERFIELD: And this being somewhat of a para --
14 it seems to have a military organization to it, if there
15 was a need to know and you went across and asked where this
16 money went, what would happen to you?

17 MR. KELLEY: They'd probably tell you to -- they'd
18 probably say to leave them alone because it wasn't --
19 it was what they call unnecessary noise. You don't
20 need to know.

21 MR. BERFIELD: So, it goes back to military: Just
22 what you need to know is --

23 MR. KELLEY: Right, basically.

24 MR. BERFIELD: Just one last question here: You

1 referred to this RPF auditing room as awesome.

2 What was so much more awesome about it than any of
3 the other auditing rooms?

4 MR. KELLEY: Well, a regular auditing room is just
5 one -- it's just you in the room. And the RPF -- there's
6 another unit that used to do their auditing in the same
7 room. It's just a big -- big room with about four or
8 five tables in it, and that's where you do your auditing.

9 I mean, you'd be auditing here and someone else
10 would be next to you auditing on a totally different
11 thing.

12 That gets into a strange -- they used to get into
13 a strange phenomenon at times.

14 MR. BERFIELD: Well, about the RPF auditing room,
15 you had specifically said that there was something
16 awesome about that. What's awesome?

17 MR. KELLEY: Well, comparatively, because in a
18 regular auditing room, that's where you're doing your
19 counseling. And it's between you and your auditor. That
20 doesn't -- I don't need to go into that. But that's a
21 real quiet place and it's real private.

22 And the RPF auditing room is so noisy, you know.
23 There was a lot of people in there. It was also clutter
24 and that sort of thing.

1 When I first came on staff, I was in the Flag
2 Readiness Room, and in that operation we did the same
3 thing. We audited in this big room. And that -- that's
4 all. It's just real cluttered and large.

5 MR. BERFIELD: I have no further questions.

6 MR. LeCHER: All right.

7 MRS. GARVEY: In auditing, were you told that the
8 E-Meter was scientifically based or not?

9 MR. KELLEY: Scientifically based? Yes.

10 MRS. GARVEY: That they were scientifically based?

11 MR. KELLEY: Right, that it was a scientific
12 instrument that would run a small matter of charges
13 through your body that measures electronically -- or
14 electrically.

15 MR. LeCHER: I just have one -- two quickies.

16 What is IMO? Then we're going to go --

17 MR. KELLEY: IMO?

18 MR. LeCHER: It's evidenced with --

19 MR. KELLEY: IMO?

20 MR. LeCHER: -- "See your executives, the IMO."

21 MR. KELLEY: CMO?

22 MR. LeCHER: Is that -- I make it IMO.

23 MR. KELLEY: CMO.

24 MR. LeCHER: It's the International Management

1 Board?

2 MR. KELLEY: If it is, it's come on since I left.

3 MR. LeCHER: It's 1981.

4 One other question: You talked about giving money
5 for a room as a -- more or less of a donation or as for
6 services. You also said that for anything that they
7 sold there. You also mentioned getting a five percent
8 discount.

9 Do you think it's possible to get a five percent
10 discount on a donation?

11 MR. KELLEY: Oh, yeah. See, there's an advance
12 payment discount --

13 MR. LeCHER: No, no. If I buy something and I
14 pay cash, I might get five percent. But how can you get
15 five percent off a donation? It doesn't seem --

16 MR. KELLEY: Oh, how can you get the five percent
17 itself? I don't understand what you --

18 MR. LeCHER: Well.

19 MR. KELLEY: That would be a discount.

20 MR. CALDERBANK: He doesn't understand.

21 MR. KELLEY: Say, the services were originally
22 \$15,000.00, the discount would be twelve thousand five
23 hundred -- whatever.

24 MR. SHOEMAKER: Did you ever hear the word

1 "donation"?

2 MR. KELLEY: Oh, sure. That's what they were
3 considered, donations.

4 MR. LeCHER: My question is: How could you give a
5 discount on a donation? I can see you giving me a dis-
6 count on --

7 MR. KELLEY: Oh, I see what --

8 MR. LeCHER: -- a purchase because you pay cash,
9 but you can't give a discount on a donation.

10 MR. KELLEY: I see. Good point.

11 They were called -- they were called donations.
12 There was also a five percent discount.

13 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

14 Was your brother's name in an auditing folder?
15 You mentioned your brother was upset with your --

16 MR. KELLEY: He was more likely in my Ethics
17 folder.

18 MR. LeCHER: So, that's how they tracked down your
19 brother or --

20 MR. KELLEY: Quite possibly. They may have possibly
21 wire tapped; he was calling around the country trying to
22 find out something about Scientology. Because no one
23 else knew I was there but --

24 MR. LeCHER: Do you know anything about wire taps?

1 MR. KELLEY: I know that they have been used with
2 other people.

3 MR. LeCHER: With members or enemies?

4 MR. KELLEY: Enemies, always enemies.

5 That's not -- that's not personal knowledge while
6 I was in Clearwater. It's knowledge I ascertained after
7 I got out.

8 MR. LeCHER: All right.

9 Then, it's not firsthand that you actually saw --

10 MR. KELLEY: No.

11 MR. LeCHER: We have to try to go through five
12 witnesses today, ladies and gentlemen. And we have no
13 more questions, at least, I have none. I have plenty
14 to ask you, but I think we better get moving.

15 I want to thank you for coming.

16 Do you want to say anything in conclusion?

17 MR. KELLEY: No, I don't.

18 I think I've pretty much said what I wanted to
19 say.

20 MR. LeCHER: Thank you very much for coming.

21 Now, we -- you have another witness?

22 MR. FLYNN: I do, Mayor. And I'd just like to
23 make - Rosie Pace, please - a little point of information,
24 if I could, for the benefit of, perhaps, the city and

1 the Commission.

2 As a consultant, I have endeavored to present a
3 cross-section of different witnesses on different levels
4 of the organization, and -- of which Mr. Kelley repre-
5 sents one particular level as Mr. Walters represented a
6 particular level: a policy level, as opposed to Mr.
7 Kelley, for instance, being on the level that he was on
8 as he described it.

9 And it might be something that should be kept in
10 mind as different witnesses may have participated in very
11 compartmentalized activities, such as Guardian's Office
12 activities as opposed to Treasury Division activities in
13 terms of very isolated jobs. And you might find that
14 different witnesses look at the organization in terms of
15 their experiences on the level that they were operating
16 on.

17 The next witness is an individual named Rosie Pace
18 and, while she's coming in, I'll quickly introduce a few
19 documents.

20 MR. LeCHER: All right. Rosie Pace is the next
21 witness; is that correct? It's not --

22 MR. FLYNN: No. We'll go with Rosie Pace now.

23 MR. LeCHER: Do you want to lower this --

24 MR. FLYNN: If I could, please.

1 MR. FLYNN: Exhibit No. 30 will be a Hubbard
2 Communications Office policy letter in June 1959. And
3 I will refer the Commission to the bottom of the page
4 dealing with "duplicate contracts, releases and promissory
5 notes."

6 And the relevant portion is as follows: "Any staff
7 member signing up a preclear student or PE attendee will
8 get one original and one carbon copy of each contract,
9 release, and promissory note necessary to be signed."
10 And then, skipping down to the last paragraph: "The
11 carbon copy of the contract and release, along with the
12 yellow invoice, is routed to the Associate Secretary
13 and from him to the department head concerned: the
14 Director of Processing, the Director of Training, or
15 the PE Foundation Director. After being reviewed by the
16 department head, these are then routed for filing in
17 the administrative division of each department. A
18 carbon copy of the promissory note is routed to the
19 Director of Accounts. The policy -- this policy must
20 be rigidly enforced as it saves much expense in adminis-
21 trative time."

22 It's copyrighted by L. Ron Hubbard.

23 (A copy of a policy letter from
24 Hubbard Communications Office, dated
June 1959, was marked as Exhibit No.
30, as of this date.)

1 MR. FLYNN: The next document -- the next docu-
2 ment is a form affidavit.

3 (A copy of an affidavit was marked
4 as Exhibit No. 31, as of this date.)

5 MR. SHOEMAKER: Mr. Flynn, if I might ask: For
6 instance, on that last document, it said it was copy-
7 righted by L. Ron Hubbard and it said Mary Sue Hubbard
8 for L. Ron Hubbard.

9 Would you explain that as to what effect that has
10 from a legal point of view?

11 MR. FLYNN: Everything -- or 99.9 percent of the
12 publications of the Church of Scientology are copyrighted
13 by L. Ron Hubbard. At various points in time in
14 connection with various areas of responsibility, such as
15 Guardian's Office activities, there was an immediate
16 level of recognition in responsibility below L. Ron
17 Hubbard, and that was, primarily, Guardian's Office
18 Legal Affairs and Guardian's Office B 1 Activities,
19 which is intelligence gathering activities, for which
20 Mary Sue Hubbard was directly responsible.

21 So, in those types of publications, her name also
22 appears.

23 And Exhibit 31 is a form affidavit for the Church
24 of Scientology with regard to -- and I won't bother

1 reading through all this because we have a number of
2 forms for people who actually signed them. But basically,
3 it's a promise not to divulge any information about the
4 Church of Scientology without the prior consent of
5 Hubbard, its members, and the organization itself.

6 MR. BERFIELD: Counsel, where are these coming
7 from, so that we know they're not something that's just
8 being made up?

9 MR. FLYNN: All right.

10 Well, the HCO policy letter comes right out of a
11 set of green volumes which, in order to -- in view of
12 the time constraints we're working under, I would have
13 to put into evidence all of the green volumes. If it
14 becomes necessary, we'll do that. There's some twelve
15 of them. And all of the ten red technical bulletins.
16 And if it becomes necessary, we'll do that. But the
17 amount of the paperwork the Commission could be con-
18 fronted with in a very short time would be unwieldy.

19 MR. BERFIELD: No. I mean, if you would just
20 address that so that --

21 MRS. GARVEY: Just say where it's coming from.

22 MR. BERFIELD: -- just where it's --

23 MR. FLYNN: That's where it's coming from.

24 And if need be, at the conclusion of the hearings,

1 we can just simply put all of those books into evidence
2 and correlate them to the particular xerox copies that
3 I'm introducing now.

4 And the form affidavit is also such a document.

5 The next exhibit, Affidavit of Janet Troy, is --
6 and there will be an affidavit signed by Janet Troy
7 relative to this document and relative to other matters
8 that are involved with the Church of Scientology, which
9 will be introduced at a later time and we'll tie the
10 two together.

11 Basically, if you go down to paragraph six, Janet
12 has stated that she "hereby discharges fully and releases
13 L. Ron Hubbard, any Scientologist, and Scientology
14 course, their assigns and successors from all rights,
15 claims, or any actions myself or any successor or
16 assigned to myself may have now or hereafter the signing
17 of this agreement against L. Ron Hubbard, any person,
18 any Scientology Church, their assigns or successors.
19 This release is freely and voluntarily executed by
20 myself with my understanding of the terms used herein
21 and the consequences resulting therefrom.

22 "That I do hereby waive all rights to refund or
23 repayment of any donations that I have made or will
24 make in the future to the Church of Scientology. I waive

1 this right of my own free will."

2 (A copy of the Affidavit of Janet
3 Troy was marked as Exhibit No. 31,
 as of this date.)

4 MR. SHOEMAKER: Mr. Flynn, is that legal?

5 MR. FLYNN: I believe the evidence will be that
6 in -- for most people entering Scientology, they're made
7 to sign these documents at the outset and, for the most
8 part, they have no idea what they're signing. At various
9 points during their proceeding through Scientology, when
10 difficulties arise -- if difficulties arise -- and as the
11 last witness testified, he left, and during the time he
12 was in he was never in the RPF; so, no difficulties
13 arose until he had already left. And afterward, his
14 brother -- his brother's wife was visited by some unknown
15 people.

16 But if difficulties arise of a substantial nature
17 during the period that they're in the Church, I believe
18 the evidence will show that these people are made to
19 believe that these documents are enforceable in a court
20 of law. And I also believe that the evidence will show
21 that items such as I'm about to introduce indicate that
22 promissory notes, legal promissory notes, were signed.

23 In fact, when you asked me, "Is it legal," well,
24 I would say that the thing is utterly unenforceable. But

1 the issue is whether or not the people are made to
2 believe that it might be enforceable.

3 MR. LeCHER: Didn't one of the witnesses say that
4 they were told that the money would be -- it would be
5 a money back guarantee, and some, at least, tried to get
6 their money back and they were promised but never
7 received it?

8 MR. FLYNN: That's true.

9 I think that the testimony there and the testimony
10 in the future will be that they are told about a refund
11 policy, but, in fact, as you just saw in the Janet Troy
12 Affidavit, it's often times -- most of the time they
13 sign documents that they don't even realize they're
14 signing, saying they can't get a refund. And then, they
15 are led to another policy which says they can get a
16 refund.

17 So, there's a conflict between the two policies.
18 And most of the time, the people have no idea what their
19 rights are.

20 MRS. GARVEY: Was Janet Troy a staff member?

21 MR. FLYNN: Janet Troy was a staff member; that's
22 correct.

23 MRS. GARVEY: Is it different for a staff member
24 than it is for a Scientologist that's coming for a course?

1 MR. FLYNN: It is.

2 The people that sign -- there are different types
3 of waivers and different types of releases that are
4 signed for contract or staff members as opposed to a
5 public person who is just coming to get services.

6 For instance, the first affidavit that I introduced
7 in blank form was for someone who was a public person.
8 The one I just introduced is for a staff member.

9 MR. CALDERBANK: But these are made or represented
10 to the people as legal documents, binding in the outside
11 world?

12 MR. FLYNN: As I indicated before, for the most
13 part, when they're signing them, they don't even know
14 what they're signing. When difficulties arise, they are
15 presented with the fact that they are enforceable docu-
16 ments and they can be used against them in a court of
17 law.

18 And in fact, there will be affidavits in evidence
19 to that effect, which brings up one more point. In
20 view of the time and cost constraints of the four days
21 that we're laboring under and the seventeen or so wit-
22 nesses we're going to try to get through, I'm presenting
23 affidavits of people on some subjects to corroborate
24 other pieces of evidence. If the city at some point,

1 having its appetite whetted, so to speak, about the
2 potential scope of this subject saw fit to continue the
3 hearings and bring in more witnesses, I would suggest
4 to the Commission that there are many, many more wit-
5 nesses who could come in and testify about specific
6 points.

7 MR. CALDERBANK: Are these individual malcontents
8 or are there many people like this who have been going
9 through the same or similar circumstances where they've
10 been threatened, harrassed, apparently, threatened to be
11 sued by L. Ron Hubbard?

12 MR. FLYNN: What I have endeavored to do is rather
13 than bring witnesses who have just been harrassed, I
14 endeavored to bring in witnesses who represent a cross-
15 section of their experiences in Scientology so that the
16 Commission, I believe, at the end of four days will have
17 experiences with different people in different positions
18 who experienced different things in the organization,
19 rather than just a selection of victims who have been
20 harrassed, some of which you will hear about in detail.

21 MR. LeCHER: One thing about the contracts: You
22 mentioned -- the young man, Mr. Kelley, mentioned about
23 young people younger than him, younger than eighteen, that
24 were twelve and thirteen and handling vast sums of money.

1 Do they also sign these contracts?

2 MR. FLYNN: The next exhibit is an exhibit of Tonja
3 Burden - it's a multi-page exhibit with some fifty or
4 seventy thousand dollars of promissory notes - who worked
5 for the organization from the age of thirteen to the age
6 of seventeen. She never was given any education in this
7 city; she was for two years and three months.

8 And as you will see from the exhibit, she signed
9 releases, non-disclosure bonds, promissory notes --

10 MR. LeCHER: At what age did she sign these?

11 MR. FLYNN: At varying ages during -- with regard
12 to the invoices and the promissory notes, at various times
13 when she was in the city. With regard to the releases,
14 she signed releases when she was in the organization.
15 And then, afterwards, she was taken -- after she escaped
16 from the City of Clearwater, as the affidavit will show --
17 and if need be, she can be called as a witness, but she
18 does have a lawsuit against the Church, and I have made
19 an effort to discriminate between individuals who have a
20 lawsuit and those who don't, but she could be called as
21 a witness.

22 And as her -- some of her documents show, she
23 was -- and her affidavit will show to the Commission,
24 after she literally escaped from the Fort Harrison RPF,

1 she went home to her -- the City of Las Vegas. And
2 approximately two or three weeks later, two Guardian's
3 Office operatives arrived in the City of Las Vegas and
4 took her to Los Angeles, locked her in a room, and put
5 her on the cans. And after that, she was made to sign
6 many documents which are here, which I won't read at
7 this particular time but I'll read in connection with
8 her affidavit, whereby she was informed that she owed
9 the organization some sixty thousand dollars. And this
10 is after she was out of the organization.

11 And she was sent a freeloader's debt of \$63,000.00
12 which she was told she had to pay and --

13 MR. LeCHER: What I'm getting at: Would she sign
14 something that she believed to be legal? Was she a
15 minor; was she under age?

16 MR. FLYNN: That's correct.

17 MR. LeCHER: She was what, sixteen years old?

18 MR. FLYNN: That's correct.

19 She was signing -- she signed many documents at
20 various points in time from the age of thirteen to the
21 age of seventeen.

22 MR. LeCHER: Can a thirteen to a seventeen year old
23 sign something to pay eighty, ninety thousand dollars?

24 MR. FLYNN: Of course not.

1 MR. BERFIELD: Counsel, a question that I have
2 here: This is an administrative or a legislative hearing,
3 and some of the rules of justice do not prevail here on
4 hearsay and what have you. But if you had to introduce
5 all of this into evidence, you said that it would be
6 voluminous.

7 What are you talking about in size?

8 MR. FLYNN: Well, for instance, if we -- when Mr.
9 Walters was on the witness stand - he is aware of most
10 policies within the Church - and to go into every policy,
11 his testimony could have taken a week in itself because
12 of the scope of his knowledge. And we could have put into
13 evidence, probably, fifteen or twenty different volumes
14 of some six hundred or seven hundred pages each, together
15 with, probably, a thousand documents of Guardian's Office
16 activities, which would begin to display the scope of
17 the operation.

18 Since we don't have those -- that amount of time -
19 and we're laboring under financial constraints - what
20 I've endeavored to do is to present some people at
21 different levels. And you will be hearing from some
22 Guardian's Office operatives who, actually, have committed
23 burglaries. You have just heard from an individual who
24 was simply a young boy who came into the organization and

1 worked at a very low level here at the Fort Harrison, and you
2 heard it from his point of view. And you've heard Mr.
3 Walters' experiences from his point of view.

4 So, in order to give you a proper perspective --
5 we could be here for two months. And in my own judgment,
6 having worked with the subject for three years, you would
7 begin to realize the scope of the problem, in my own
8 judgment.

9 In any event, the next witness is Rosie Pace.

10 MR. LeCHER: Miss Pace.

11 Will you bring in Miss Pace, please.

12 Commissioners, again I ask you to - and I remind
13 myself, too - that we should be to the point and brief
14 because we do have thirteen or fourteen witnesses to go.
15 And I think we have a day and-a-half to do it in.

16 MR. BERFIELD: Mayor, while she's coming in: Mr.
17 Flynn, these volumes are available for our inspection,
18 are they not?

19 MR. FLYNN: Absolutely. And if the Commission
20 desires, I will have them introduced into evidence at
21 the close of the proceedings for your perusal.

22 MR. SHOEMAKER: Commissioner Berfield, also, some
23 of the -- many of the documents which Mr. Flynn is
24 referring to were, in fact, submitted as appendices to

1 his initial report. The problem with that was that the
2 appendices were about this high --

3 MR. BERFIELD: I realize that.

4 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- in addition to the report, so
5 we didn't distribute them. Certainly, they are available
6 in the public library and they're also available down
7 at the City Clerk's Office for anyone who wants to see
8 them.

9 MR. FLYNN: Correct.

10 On that point, I would like to simply suggest that
11 just to review Guardian's Office documents involving
12 operations in the City of Clearwater, there's a volume
13 about yea thick of probably a thousand pages. On
14 Guardian's Office operations nationwide, it's probably
15 five to ten thousand pages thick that are either currently
16 on record or could be produced. And that is not even
17 getting into issues of financial issues, training issues,
18 legal issues, such as the releases and the waivers I put
19 into evidence.

20 MR. CALDERBANK: If it pleased the Commission, at
21 the end of the hearing process, then, I would like to have
22 as many of these documents entered in, in addition to the
23 documents that he is entering in throughout -- or during
24 the testimony to substantiate them. I'd like as much

1 information as possible from both sides.

2 MR. LeCHER: All right.

3 Let's get with Miss Pace. Miss Rosie Pace.

4 I have to ask you the five -- before I do that,
5 I must ask you to get sworn in, please.

6 Is the Clerk there, Mrs. Lamkin?

7
8 ROSIE PACE, a witness herein,
9 having first been duly sworn by a Clerk for the City of
10 Clearwater, was examined and testified as follows:

11 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

12 Miss Pace, we're going to ask you the five basic
13 questions, then, we'll get on to have you discuss your
14 role.

15 The first question: Are you appearing here today
16 and testifying under oath voluntarily?

17 MS. PACE: Yes.

18 MR. LeCHER: Have you been paid by anyone for your
19 testimony, other than the expenses for coming to Clear-
20 water?

21 MS. PACE: No.

22 MR. LeCHER: Do you have a lawsuit against the
23 Church of Scientology?

24 MS. PACE: No.

1 MR. LeCHER: Does the Church of Scientology have
2 a lawsuit against you?

3 MS. PACE: No.

4 MR. LeCHER: Has anyone suggested to you that you
5 should state anything but the truth, or has anyone
6 suggested that you change your testimony for any reason?

7 MS. PACE: No.

8 MR. LeCHER: Are you -- just to set the stage here,
9 are you the sister of Lori?

10 MS. PACE: Yes, I am.

11 MR. LeCHER: Who spoke yesterday.

12 MS. PACE: Yes.

13 MR. LeCHER: Miss Pace, would you like to make a
14 statement or would you like me to start asking you
15 questions, or would you like to do it in your own way?

16 MS. PACE: Well, I'd like to tell you how I got
17 into Scientology.

18 MR. LeCHER: I'd like to hear that.

19 MS. PACE: Okay.

20 I've been in -- first of all, I'm very, very
21 nervous.

22 MR. LeCHER: I know you are and you've been waiting
23 a long time and so forth.

24 MS. PACE: I came into Scientology seventeen years

1 ago in 1965. I was thirteen. And I was having a lot of
2 trouble with school and I didn't want to go.

3 MR. LeCHER: To school?

4 MS. PACE: Yes.

5 So, my sister, Lori, had gotten involved in
6 Scientology and she felt that it could help me. And her
7 intention was that that would make me want to go to
8 school.

9 But when I went into the organization, they told
10 me, well, I was right in not wanting to go to school
11 and --

12 MR. LeCHER: At age thirteen?

13 MS. PACE: Yes.

14 And that the Board of Education was suppressive,
15 and that I would be harmed if I did go to school. And
16 at the time, I loved it; I thought that was great. And
17 that they would write a letter to the Board of Education
18 that I was getting spiritual counseling so that I
19 wouldn't be sent to a reform school or anything like
20 that, that it was okay that I didn't go to school because
21 of the spiritual counseling.

22 MR. LeCHER: Did they write a letter to the Board
23 of Education?

24 MS. PACE: Yes, they did.

1 MR. LeCHER: Did the Board of Education in that
2 particular community agree that spiritual counseling was
3 more valuable than school?

4 MS. PACE: At the time, it was for -- it was
5 supposed to be for a brief period of time that I would
6 be getting the counseling. Somehow, I managed not to
7 go to school. I just wanted not -- not to be sent to a
8 reform school. And I started getting Scientology train-
9 ing at the age of fourteen. And I was a highly classed
10 auditor at the age of sixteen. And that has been my
11 life.

12 MR. LeCHER: Your life -- when did you leave the
13 Church?

14 MS. PACE: Just two months ago, officially.

15 MR. LeCHER: Can you tell me something with
16 respect -- were you in Clearwater?

17 MS. PACE: Yes, I was.

18 MR. LeCHER: How long were you in Clearwater?

19 MS. PACE: I was in Clearwater for seven months,
20 from May '79 till December '79.

21 MR. LeCHER: Can you tell me something about the
22 activities in Clearwater?

23 MS. PACE: Well --

24 MR. LeCHER: From your first person point of view,

1 what you actually saw?

2 MS. PACE: All right.

3 I arrived in Clearwater, and the first night I was
4 taken to a room at the Gray Moss because there was no
5 dorm for me. The next night I was brought to a dorm
6 which had no light, and I had my luggage and I couldn't
7 get in the room. There were about ten beds in the room.

8 MR. LeCHER: How old were you at the time?

9 MS. PACE: This is three years ago; I was twenty-
10 seven.

11 And there were suitcases all over the room, no
12 light. So, I just walked down the stairs and I said, "I'd
13 like to pay for my own room because I don't want to stay
14 in the dorm," and that's what I did.

15 And I was here for NED for OTs training.

16 MR. LeCHER: NED for OTs?

17 MS. PACE: NED for OTs.

18 MR. LeCHER: Oh, NED for OTs.

19 MS. PACE: Right, which was supposed to be beyond
20 your wildest dreams and it was just going to handle
21 everything that's wrong with you, and that I would be
22 treated like gold when I got to Flag Land Base. And I
23 later found out that that was an absolute lie.

24 I started my training. It was going along fine.

1 And Lori had come one month later. And she was having
2 a little bit of trouble and she blew, like she said.
3 And my other sister, Annie, was with me.

4 We got pulled into Ethics, immediately, and they
5 told us it was a conspiracy. And I got very physically
6 ill. I had a high fever and swollen glands and I couldn't
7 get out of bed. And I was ordered out of bed because
8 there was going to be a meeting with the senior CS of
9 the Flag Land Base.

10 So, I got out of bed and he screamed and screamed
11 and screamed and ordered me back on post the next morning.
12 Also, my sister, Annie, who's not here, was sick, also.
13 And he ordered her back on post the next morning and said
14 he would not tolerate any illness.

15 MR. LeCHER: Who was "he," and what was his title?

16 MS. PACE: He was the senior case supervisor; his
17 name was Jeff Walker.

18 And Lori came back the next day. By this time, I
19 was afraid for Lori because, as far as I was concerned,
20 this man, this Jeff Walker, was insane. He was screaming
21 and just totally psychotic.

22 Anyway, Lori came back. And I was having severe
23 headaches. I've had them for a long time. And they had
24 gotten worse. And I decided to see an eye doctor because

1 I had some trouble with my eyes and I thought maybe that
2 was the problem.

3 Anyway, it ended up, I had an eye operation. That's
4 how I got out of the Flag Land Base. Before then, I
5 couldn't get out; I thought I couldn't get out, mentally;
6 I couldn't leave.

7 MR. LeCHER: What was wrong with you that they
8 forced you out of bed? I mean, were you just emotionally
9 drained or did you have the flu or --

10 MS. PACE: I had a high fever and swollen glands,
11 sore throat, and I was just very weak. I was very upset
12 that my sister had blown because that's the worst thing
13 you can do in Scientology. And I was afraid of what
14 was going to happen to her when she returned.

15 MR. LeCHER: Were you concerned then that you might
16 infect other people?

17 MS. PACE: I'm sorry?

18 MR. LeCHER: Weren't you or they concerned that you
19 might infect other people? Forgetting about your own
20 health, if you did have a temperature, you may have a tendency
21 to infect the whole dorm or the whole organization.

22 MS. PACE: Well, obviously, he didn't care.

23 MR. LeCHER: Is that standard practice, that if
24 you feel ill you cannot go to a doctor?

1 MS. PACE: Well, you're allowed to go to a doctor.
2 I wasn't told to go to a doctor; I was told to return to
3 post. So, that's all I know.

4 You are allowed to see a doctor.

5 MR. LeCHER: Can you go alone to see a doctor or
6 must you be escorted there by --

7 MS. PACE: The MAA, the Master at Arms, of Flag
8 Land Base said he'd have to come with me.

9 MR. LeCHER: You couldn't go on your own?

10 MS. PACE: Well, I convinced him that I was able to
11 go on my own, that I really didn't want him to come with
12 me.

13 MR. SHOEMAKER: Could you give that title, again,
14 please?

15 MS. PACE: Master at Arms.

16 MR. SHOEMAKER: Master at Arms.

17 MS. PACE: That's the Ethics Officer.

18 MR. LeCHER: If you had a physical ailment that may
19 be rather personal in nature, would that ailment be con-
20 cealed from the Master at Arms or from the organization,
21 and would it be just between you and your doctor?

22 MS. PACE: No. The doctor is to write a report
23 and give it to the Medical Officer.

24 MR. LeCHER: Were these doctors chosen at random

1 out of the phone book or were they Scientology doctors?

2 MS. PACE: They weren't Scientology doctors.

3 MR. LeCHER: Can you tell me about -- anything more
4 about the living conditions in Clearwater?

5 MS. PACE: Well, I didn't live in a dorm. But
6 after I had my eye operation, I couldn't stay in my
7 regular room because there was auditing going on in there,
8 and I spent most of my days in the dorms just sleeping on
9 a bunk. And there were ants crawling all over you. There were --

10 MR. LeCHER: Ants?

11 MS. PACE: -- ants all over the bed. There were
12 about eight to ten beds in each room, no air conditioner,
13 luggage all over the room; you could hardly walk. There
14 were roaches all over the entire building.

15 MR. LeCHER: What about maid service -- or did you
16 change your own linens and wash your own linens?

17 MS. PACE: If you're -- if you're a staff member,
18 you handle your own linens, do your own laundry. If
19 you're a public person --

20 MR. LeCHER: You had maid service?

21 MS. PACE: Yes.

22 MR. LeCHER: Who -- where did you find these maids?
23 Were they from within the community, trained domestics,
24 or were they also Scientologists that were doing --

1 MS. PACE: They were staff members.

2 MR. LeCHER: Staff members.

3 MS. PACE: Of the Church of Scientology.

4 MR. LeCHER: How do you get to be a maid? I mean,
5 do you apply for the job or are you given that job for
6 performing your duties --

7 MS. PACE: Well, I think, when you first come in,
8 you do this sort of work.

9 MR. LeCHER: You work your way up within the organi-
10 zation?

11 MS. PACE: Yes.

12 MR. LeCHER: From a maid to a higher position?

13 MS. PACE: Yes.

14 I didn't go through this process, but I -- you do
15 physical work before you're promoted.

16 MR. LeCHER: You apparently were highly trained
17 within the Church of Scientology. How did -- how much
18 money were you paid as a staff member?

19 MS. PACE: Well, it varied through the years.
20 Sometimes, nothing; sometimes, twenty dollars a week,
21 depending on how much they made that week.

22 MR. LeCHER: If you were started at thirteen -- and
23 you say you were in there for seventeen years?

24 MS. PACE: Yes.

1 MR. LeCHER: And obviously, your education must
2 have been limited; your skills, marketing skills, must
3 have been limited. You were paid, at most, twenty
4 dollars a week.

5 How did you support yourself, buy personal objects,
6 clothes, and things?

7 MS. PACE: Well, when I was a teenager, I lived with
8 my sisters and I babysat for them. And Lori was married,
9 my sister, Lori. That's how I lived then. And I worked
10 on the outside to support myself later on.

11 MR. LeCHER: Did you work in Clearwater?

12 MS. PACE: No.

13 I had a business in California when I was at
14 Clearwater. That's how I was able to get my own room.

15 MR. LeCHER: You and your sister seem like very
16 industrious women in spite of all you've been through,
17 the number of years' hell that were spent in Scientology.

18 We talked about the -- did you have -- what about
19 the Fair Game? Has it been affecting you when you left --
20 since you left the Church, have they tried to contact
21 you or talk you into coming back within the organization?

22 MS. PACE: No.

23 The only person who called me was my husband, who
24 left me. When I told him what I had found out about

1 Scientology, that I had just been miserable --

2 MR. LeCHER: Is he a Scientologist?

3 MS. PACE: He's in the Sea Org., and he's filing
4 for divorce. And he's the only person who has called
5 me and tried to harrass me, but hasn't.

6 MR. LeCHER: If you were not married to a high
7 ranking member, do you think you would have been -- I
8 will erase the question.

9 I'll yield now to Mr. Hatchett.

10 MR. SHOEMAKER: Mrs. Garvey.

11 MR. LeCHER: Mrs. Garvey, sorry.

12 MRS. GARVEY: Did you ever find out in particular
13 what your illness was?

14 MS. PACE: No.

15 MRS. GARVEY: When you were auditing, did you assume
16 that the auditing information was confidential?

17 MS. PACE: Yes.

18 MRS. GARVEY: When you were audited, did you assume
19 the information was confidential?

20 MS. PACE: Yes.

21 MRS. GARVEY: When you were auditing, were you told
22 it was based on scientific techniques?

23 MS. PACE: Yes.

24 MRS. GARVEY: What were you told about the Guardian

1 Office?

2 MS. PACE: I was told that the Guardian's Office
3 was there to protect Scientology and L. Ron Hubbard
4 against the FBI, CIA, AMA, that they were attacking
5 Scientology. That's -- that's what I honestly believed
6 all these years.

7 MRS. GARVEY: Did you have any contact at all with
8 anyone from the Guardian's Office or were you ever called
9 in for any reason?

10 MS. PACE: No.

11 MRS. GARVEY: Does the -- did you see the Medical
12 Officer when you were having problems and did he prescribe
13 anything or have any directions for you?

14 MS. PACE: I saw the Medical Officer once and I
15 told him I wanted to see a doctor, and he didn't prescribe
16 anything. I did have to go through him.

17 MRS. GARVEY: Okay.

18 Why did you leave, finally?

19 MS. PACE: Because I hated it. I wanted to die
20 while I was there. I was hoping - and this is the truth -
21 I was hoping that when I went to the doctor that he would
22 tell me I had cancer. And that -- that way, I could get
23 out, because, mentally, I could not leave Flag Land Base
24 unless I was dying.

1 MRS. GARVEY: You mean, you were so committed
2 towards what you spent -- had been doing for seventeen
3 years that you just couldn't say, "I no longer" --

4 MS. PACE: Right.

5 MRS. GARVEY: And walk out?

6 MS. PACE: Right.

7 MRS. GARVEY: Even though you don't feel that you
8 were getting anything anymore or --

9 MS. PACE: I was a nervous wreck; I was shaking, I
10 couldn't sleep, I couldn't eat. I lost twenty pounds.
11 I was miserable and unhappy, and I couldn't walk out the
12 door. I thought I couldn't walk out the door.

13 MRS. GARVEY: What -- can you explain a little bit
14 why you were so -- so miserable, so unhappy? What pre-
15 cipitated that?

16 MS. PACE: Yeah.

17 I think, when Lori gave her testimony yesterday --
18 I saw what they did to her. Lori got very physically
19 ill and her leg swelled up. She had arthritis. And I
20 saw her humiliated and forced to work, to do physical
21 labor. And the same thing happened to me.

22 And I looked around and I said, "What am I doing
23 here? How" -- I didn't see that we were freeing the
24 planet or that anyone was getting better. But just that

1 they had people working for seventeen dollars a week from
2 early morning till late at night. And when you get ill,
3 you don't -- you get treated badly. Instead of going to
4 a doctor and staying in bed, you're treated very badly.

5 MRS. GARVEY: The feeling I have between you and
6 your sister is that you love each other very much.

7 MS. PACE: Yes.

8 MRS. GARVEY: Do you think you would have believed
9 it if it had been someone that you didn't know personally
10 and very closely?

11 MS. PACE: No.

12 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Hatchett, do you want --

13 MR. HATCHETT: Fine.

14 Miss Pace, at the Clearwater Flag operation that's
15 here in Clearwater, did you -- or were you aware of an
16 epidemic-type of unhealthy situations that existed,
17 hepatitis or anything like that while you were here in
18 the Clearwater Flag office?

19 MS. PACE: No.

20 MR. HATCHETT: Were you ever confined for mis-
21 behavior or not meeting quotas or anything like that?

22 MS. PACE: After Lori had left, blew, we were
23 separated and put into our room, and we had a guard by
24 the door and we weren't allowed to leave. She happened

1 to be a friend, and we convinced her to leave, that we
2 wouldn't leave the Flag Land Base.

3 MR. HATCHETT: Thank you.

4 Did you have any knowledge of how money was
5 collected at the Flag operation here in Clearwater?

6 MS. PACE: No.

7 MR. HATCHETT: Did you sign any contracts or
8 waivers that you could not hold the Church of Scientology
9 responsible in any way for any of their acts?

10 MS. PACE: I --

11 MR. HATCHETT: When you first came in, did you
12 sign waivers and you may not have been aware of what you
13 were signing?

14 MS. PACE: Yes. I have signed waivers.

15 MR. HATCHETT: You have signed waivers?

16 MS. PACE: Yes.

17 MR. HATCHETT: All right.

18 Were you aware of the RPF-type of confinement?

19 MS. PACE: Yes.

20 MR. HATCHETT: Did you actually have firsthand
21 experience there?

22 MS. PACE: I have never been on the RPF, but I've
23 seen people on the RPF.

24 MR. HATCHETT: What may have been your impression

1 of their physical condition going in or coming out?

2 MS. PACE: I saw people with sores all over their
3 body. On the RPF, you're not allowed to walk ever, you
4 have to run constantly. And they just look exhausted and
5 physically ill. That's my opinion.

6 MR. HATCHETT: Would you consider that the conduct
7 of the Church of Scientology, in order to control you
8 and physically control you and, also, to have the proper
9 mind set to serve them for a billion years -- have you
10 heard that term?

11 MS. PACE: Yes.

12 MR. HATCHETT: Would you call that repressive in
13 any way?

14 MS. PACE: Yes.

15 MR. HATCHETT: Yet, they said the world, generally,
16 were repressive, right?

17 MS. PACE: Uh-huh.

18 MR. HATCHETT: And they used tactics far beyond
19 that to achieve their goals; would you say that?

20 MS. PACE: Yes.

21 MR. HATCHETT: Against anyone?

22 MS. PACE: Yes.

23 MR. HATCHETT: Thank you.

24 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Shoemaker.

1 MR. SHOEMAKER: Mrs. Pace, I hope you understand --
2 I know that you're nervous, and I can't blame you, for
3 being here. I've been doing this for a number of years
4 and I still get nervous.

5 MS. PACE: Okay.

6 MR. SHOEMAKER: But please be relatively sure that
7 we all are very interested in what you have to say, and
8 the questions we ask -- we certainly don't mean to be
9 personally embarrassing, but we are attempting to try to
10 find out certain facts relating to this.

11 MS. PACE: Okay.

12 MR. SHOEMAKER: I'm not going to embarrass you; I
13 just wanted to --

14 MS. PACE: All right.

15 MR. SHOEMAKER: Are you familiar with the Fair Game
16 Doctrine?

17 MS. PACE: Yes.

18 MR. SHOEMAKER: What does that mean to you?

19 MS. PACE: That means that if a person goes against
20 the Church, they are fair game and anything you do to
21 them is all right.

22 MR. SHOEMAKER: Was that common knowledge while
23 you were a Scientologist?

24 MS. PACE: In the early days it was and, now, I

1 believe, it's supposedly cancelled. But -- possibly,
2 they cancelled the policy, but I believe that it still
3 goes on.

4 MR. SHOEMAKER: At the time that you were still in
5 the Church --

6 MS. PACE: Yes.

7 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- did you believe that there was
8 such a thing as the Fair Game Doctrine or did you think
9 about it?

10 MS. PACE: I did believe it.

11 MR. SHOEMAKER: You did?

12 MS. PACE: Yes.

13 MR. SHOEMAKER: What is the worst thing that can
14 happen to a Scientologist?

15 MS. PACE: I don't understand.

16 MR. SHOEMAKER: In terms of devoting your life,
17 which, obviously, you did --

18 MS. PACE: Yes.

19 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- for a period of sixteen or
20 seventeen years - and I'm walking on sensitive ground
21 with the beliefs - what is the worst thing that somebody
22 could say could happen to you as a Scientologist, the
23 worst thing that could happen to you?

24 MS. PACE: Do you mean, after you leave the Church

1 or while you're a Scientologist?

2 MR. SHOEMAKER: Or even leaving the Church --

3 MS. PACE: I think the worst part of the Church of
4 Scientology is the feeling that you can't leave. Through
5 the processing, which I considered damaging sometimes, I
6 feel it's a -- I feel that you can get brainwashed to a
7 point where you feel you can't leave, which is the worst
8 part: the betrayal that you're leaving the group when
9 they're supposedly freeing the planet. And this is
10 drummed into you.

11 And even now, I still have the effects of Scien-
12 tology. I'm not over it yet.

13 MR. SHOEMAKER: Do you feel that you would have
14 left if it hadn't been for the incident that occurred to
15 your sister?

16 MS. PACE: Yes, eventually, I would have.

17 MR. SHOEMAKER: Eventually, you would have?

18 MS. PACE: Yes.

19 MR. SHOEMAKER: Is your other sister still in
20 Scientology?

21 MS. PACE: No, she's not.

22 MR. SHOEMAKER: She is not.

23 There was a -- Lori mentioned yesterday a comment
24 about folder pages, that is; young people that carry

1 folders, auditing folders, as I understand.

2 Could you go into that a little bit and tell us what
3 the age of these individuals are and what they do and,
4 to your knowledge, whether they have any kind of an
5 educational process or whatever?

6 MS. PACE: Well, I think the ages are - from what
7 I've seen --

8 MR. SHOEMAKER: Right.

9 MS. PACE: -- are from about eight years old, maybe,
10 to thirteen, twelve or thirteen. And what they do is
11 carry folders back and forth to the Hubbard Guidance
12 Center, from session to session and, then, back to the Hubbard
13 Guidance Center. That's all -- that's all I really know
14 about it.

15 MR. SHOEMAKER: What would be their normal hours
16 of work that you would guess?

17 MS. PACE: I wouldn't know.

18 MR. SHOEMAKER: You wouldn't know?

19 MS. PACE: No.

20 I've never seen them go to school.

21 MR. SHOEMAKER: You have not?

22 MS. PACE: No, I haven't.

23 MR. SHOEMAKER: Have you ever been in the nursery
24 or any of the classrooms or anywhere they may be taught?

1 MS. PACE: No.

2 MR. SHOEMAKER: Were you aware of the RPF in terms
3 of where they were located in the Church of Scientology,
4 physically?

5 MS. PACE: I didn't know where they slept.

6 MR. SHOEMAKER: What were your feelings, your
7 internal beliefs, of Mr. Hubbard, and how did that relate
8 to when you initially became a Scientologist or caused
9 you to stay in there?

10 MS. PACE: Well, when I initially became a Scien-
11 tologist, I wasn't interested in L. Ron Hubbard. As I
12 said, I was thirteen.

13 MR. SHOEMAKER: Right.

14 MS. PACE: Later on, I thought L. Ron Hubbard was
15 the greatest man in the world for developing this tech-
16 nology.

17 Once I became an auditor and I had all my training,
18 I thought he was the greatest man in the world. I would
19 never say anything against him.

20 MR. SHOEMAKER: And was much of this based upon
21 his background as portrayed by the Church?

22 MS. PACE: Yes, his background and what I thought
23 he had done.

24 MR. SHOEMAKER: Right.

1 And that also relates back to the question of
2 being a nuclear physicist --

3 MS. PACE: Yes.

4 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- and so forth?

5 The books that have -- that you have read through
6 the time that you've been in Scientology - I'm sure you
7 haven't had time to reread them at this point but - do
8 you think you'd have a different perspective on what
9 those books say now that you --

10 MS. PACE: Yes, I do.

11 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- no longer --

12 MS. PACE: Yes.

13 MR. SHOEMAKER: From what I understand, being an
14 auditor is a very prestigious type of a position within
15 the Church.

16 MS. PACE: Yes.

17 MR. SHOEMAKER: Why did you elect to become an
18 auditor or was this something that was suggested to you
19 or -- how did that come about?

20 MS. PACE: I wanted to help people, and this is
21 how I would do it by getting the training and, then,
22 counseling people.

23 MR. SHOEMAKER: So, this was -- this was a major
24 attraction for you then within the Church itself?

1 MS. PACE: Yes.

2 MR. SHOEMAKER: At the time you were doing the
3 auditing - I know Mrs. Garvey mentioned this before but -
4 what would you guess that you have audited, thousands of
5 people?

6 MS. PACE: Yes.

7 MR. SHOEMAKER: And during this period of time,
8 certainly, you received a great deal of confidential
9 types of information from the various people.

10 How would you relate your role as an auditor to
11 these individuals in terms of what they were saying, like
12 a confession or --

13 MS. PACE: Yes.

14 MR. SHOEMAKER: Similar to a confession?

15 MS. PACE: Yes.

16 MR. SHOEMAKER: During the time that you did this
17 auditing, were there any promises that were held out to
18 the individuals that you were auditing that you were aware
19 of or that was even made by the Church or -- what was
20 supposed to be the benefit of the auditing to the
21 individual?

22 MS. PACE: Well, basically, the person was asked
23 what they wanted to handle in Scientology before they
24 got counseling.

1 MR. SHOEMAKER: And that might be like what, what
2 types of things that they might wish to handle?

3 MS. PACE: Well, maybe, they wanted to communicate
4 better, or they had a physical illness --

5 MR. SHOEMAKER: It could be a physical illness or
6 a mental illness or something like that?

7 MS. PACE: Yes.

8 MR. SHOEMAKER: And then, based upon that, what
9 was the auditing to accomplish?

10 MS. PACE: Whatever the person had said they wanted
11 handled, the auditing would attempt to handle that.

12 MR. SHOEMAKER: So, the auditing was supposed to
13 help that particular problem, whatever it might be?

14 MS. PACE: Yes.

15 MR. SHOEMAKER: It might be a physical illness or
16 a mental illness?

17 MS. PACE: Yes. I don't believe they ever promised
18 to handle physical illness.

19 MR. SHOEMAKER: Okay.

20 MS. PACE: But in -- okay. Well, they do.

21 MR. SHOEMAKER: Thank you.

22 MR. LeCHER: Miss Pace, you have -- you're thirty
23 years old, correct?

24 MS. PACE: Yes.

1 MR. LeCHER: And you've been in Scientology over
2 half your life.

3 MS. PACE: Yes.

4 MR. LeCHER: How much education have you had?

5 MS. PACE: Very little.

6 MR. LeCHER: What is the last grade you completed
7 in school?

8 MS. PACE: I went into the ninth grade just, as
9 I say, not to be sent to reform school. But I've never
10 completed it. I didn't go to the eighth grade. I went
11 for a while in the seventh grade.

12 Most of my training was just in Scientology.

13 MR. LeCHER: Why do you think that Scientologists
14 want to keep a young woman like you from getting an
15 education? I would -- I will not answer the question
16 for you. Why would you think they would want to keep
17 you relatively uneducated?

18 MS. PACE: Well, the reason I was given was because
19 the educational system was suppressive.

20 I believe it's because they wanted to use me as
21 a staff member and an auditor.

22 MR. LeCHER: I have something I'd like to produce
23 as evidence. We have -- it's Ethics Order No. -- well,
24 I'll read it to you. It's from the Sea Organization and

1 it was found in the public library.

2 It's Ethics Order No. 56-IMO. As I read it,
3 maybe you can interpret it for me. I don't understand
4 it. It's November 29th, 1981. There's a word I'm not
5 sure how to -- new enturbulation order.

6 MS. PACE: Oh, non-enturbulation order.

7 MR. LeCHER: Non-enturbulation order.

8 I'll mention the man's name, Jim Logan, Cram Off
9 WMSP. "There has been several instances of J enturbulat-
10 ing senior executives of the IMO over the past three
11 weeks," parentheses, "(evidence with HCO)," close
12 parentheses. "He has been attacking upstarts -- upstats,
13 both verbally and in writing off line chits containing
14 the false and alarming data about our senior execs to
15 other senior execs. Any instance of enturbulation from
16 Jim will be dealt with by a Suppressive Person Order
17 being issued forthwith."

18 And it's signed, "PO3 Garrett Knutsom,"
19 K-n-u-t-s-o-m, "IMRNSB, authorized by AVC CW for the
20 Board of Directors for the Church of Scientology
21 International."

22 What's all this about, do you know? Can you
23 interpret this for me? This will be an exhibit.

24 MS. PACE: I don't know what the initials stand

1 for.

2 (A copy of a Non-Enturbulation
3 Order, dated November 29, 1981, was
4 marked as Exhibit No. 33, as of
5 this date.)

6 MRS. GARVEY: Maybe Mr. Walters knows.

7 MR. LeCHER: What is enturbulation?

8 MS. PACE: Enturbulating, that means causing upset,
9 something to that effect. Causing things to not be run
10 smoothly, enturbulation.

11 Apparently, this guy had been enturbulating his
12 executive. It says he was attacking upstats. That means
13 when a person has up statistics; he was attacking that
14 somehow, verbally. He was writing false and alarming
15 data about senior executives to other senior executives.
16 And he was to be dealt with with a Suppressive Person
17 Order.

18 MR. CALDERBANK: What is --

19 MR. LeCHER: What is a Suppressive Person Order?

20 MS. PACE: Well, that's an order that comes out
21 that declares you a Suppressive Person and no other
22 Scientologist can communicate with you.

23 MR. SHOEMAKER: Could that person, then, be put
24 in the RPF and --

MS. PACE: Yes, yes.

1 You're still a Scientologist when you're put on the
2 RPF. When you're declared suppressive --

3 MR. SHOEMAKER: You're no longer a Scientologist
4 or --

5 MS. PACE: You can work through the conditions and
6 get back up to being a Scientologist. Yes.

7 MR. SHOEMAKER: And that was still in effect at the
8 time you were a Scientologist?

9 MS. PACE: Yes. Oh, I don't know until two months
10 ago.

11 MR. SHOEMAKER: But the last time you were here in
12 Clearwater --

13 MS. PACE: Yes.

14 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- which was -- when did you say?

15 MS. PACE: '79.

16 MR. LeCHER: Poor Mr. Logan. I hate to do it to
17 him, but I had to enter that into evidence.

18 MR. SHOEMAKER: Mayor, you might ask -- Mr.
19 Walters is here --

20 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Walters, would you like to
21 interpret this?

22 We, frankly - I don't know if I mentioned it - we
23 found this in the public library.

24 MR. CALDERBANK: What policies come into effect,

1 i.e., the Suppressive Person?

2
3 EDWARD WALTERS, a witness herein,
4 having been previously sworn by a Clerk for the City of
5 Clearwater, was examined and testified as follows:

6 MR. WALTERS: All right.

7 What this probably is is this young man probably
8 saw something that he didn't agree with: bad living
9 conditions, unkind or criminal actions being done by
10 higher ups. So --

11 MR. LeCHER: Are you still under oath, sir? Do
12 you consider yourself to be under oath?

13 MR. WALTERS: Yes. Yes.

14 So, he wrote -- in Scientology, you have to write
15 a chit, meaning you have to write it up. So -- because
16 verbally saying it will get him in the same trouble that
17 this will. So, he wrote it up.

18 It went up to the higher ups. The higher ups saw
19 that he knew about sensitive operations or he was aware
20 of the bad living conditions, et cetera. So, they,
21 as Ron says, attack him.

22 And this is very heavy on an individual because, if
23 he's been in a long time and working fourteen, fifteen
24 hours a day, he is told that if he continues this,

1 attacking the people who are clearing the planet, he will
2 be made a suppressive.

3 The Suppressive Order is put out legally like this,
4 but this Scientologist knows that he is now ready for
5 Fair Game; anything could happen to him. He will get
6 this and quickly be glad to do any condition they give
7 him. And he will be a good boy after this.

8 MRS. GARVEY: Some of the conditions that would be
9 given would be what?

10 MR. WALTERS: Enemy, Treason --

11 MRS. GARVEY: Some of the conditions he would go
12 through to come back into Scientology?

13 MR. WALTERS: Yes.

14 He will have to -- if he's lucky, he'll go in the
15 RPF. He won't consider it lucky when it happens, but --

16 MRS. GARVEY: I see.

17 MR. WALTERS: Because the Suppressive Order is the
18 highest thing that can happen to you. The damage to the
19 mind is much more severe than --

20 MR. SHOEMAKER: Mr. Walters, who would that have
21 been signed by, those codes?

22 MR. WALTERS: Yes, they did this to me.

23 MR. SHOEMAKER: No, sir.

24 I mean, who would -- what would that represent, the

1 name -- in terms of at the bottom with the code? Who is
2 that?

3 MR. WALTERS: All right.

4 "Authorized by AVC," which is Authorization Veri-
5 fication Committee, "for the Board of Directors for the
6 Church of Scientology." This is the people that none of
7 us in Scientology know even who they are. It was put in
8 when the government started -- wanted L. Ron Hubbard to
9 show up. So, it appears now that he's not involved in it.
10 The Board of Directors do all these things.

11 This is also sent worldwide, which means he's not
12 safe anywhere.

13 MR. LeCHER: I have another piece of -- that I'd
14 like to introduce as evidence. It's rather hard for me
15 to read because it's very light -- a light copy, but I
16 will.

17 Committe of Evidence as relates to Jim Logan. "A
18 Committee of Evidence is hereby convened on interested
19 party Jim Logan. Data to hand is that Jim has been
20 enturbulating execs in the IMC by spreading false reports
21 since he has returned from his extensive leave approxi-
22 mately three weeks ago.

23 "Jim had an approved three-week leave to pretend
24 to record an album with the band, Future Track, in the

1 LA area. Jim did return from his leave on time and was
2 eventually petitioned to extend the leave for an addition-
3 al period. This was approved, but it does not override
4 the fact that he was off post legally with an undetermined
5 quail MSV.

6 "His production has been reported to be approximate-
7 ly one-quarter of that of other Cramming Officers in
8 Qual," Q-u-a-l, "over the last ten days. He has also
9 reported to HCO a few days ago that he was going to rout
10 out of the SO and demanded a Leaving Staff Routing Form,
11 but later changed his mind. He had refused to write
12 OWs or do conditions of any kind.

13 "Charges: Placing Scientology or Scientologists
14 at risk; two, permitting a section unit department organi-
15 zation zone division to collapse; three, overworking an
16 executive by ignoring one's duties; four, neglect of
17 responsibilities resulting in catastrophe even when
18 another manages to avert the final consequences; five,
19 harmful, flagrant, and continued code break resulting
20 in important upsets; six, knowingly giving false testi-
21 mony to imperil Scientologists; seven, engaging in
22 malicious rumor-mongering to destroy the authority or
23 repute the higher officers and the leading names of
24 Scientology or to safeguard a position." That's the

1 set of charges.

2 Then it says, "The Committee: Chairman, Sonia
3 Cavella; Secretary, Rusty Hilton; Member, Karen Spencer;
4 Member, Eric Maln," M-a-l-n. "The Committee is to look
5 into the crimes above and any others that have been
6 committed. They are here to fully look into this matter
7 with the full sense of HCO, PLO, Look on, Don't Listen,
8 and other applicable PLs on Committees of Evidence in
9 Volume I and elsewhere. Findings and recommendations
10 are to be submitted to the convening authority within
11 seven days."

12 It's again signed, PO 3 Eric Knutsom, INR," et
13 cetera, et cetera, "Board of Directors to the Church of
14 Scientology International."

15 I introduce this into evidence.

16 (A copy of a Committee of Evidence
17 report was marked as Exhibit No.
34, as of this date.)

18 MR. CALDERBANK: So, it's late 1981 and they're
19 still declaring Suppressive Persons, Mayor?

20 MR. LeCHER: This was found in the public library.

21 MR. BERFIELD: Do you know when, Mayor?

22 MR. SHOEMAKER: Around the first of the year.

23

24

ROSIE PACE, Resumed.

1 MR. LeCHER: Do you want to comment on any of
2 this? Do you know anything about this?

3 MS. PACE: You want me to comment about --

4 MR. LeCHER: Yes.

5 We don't really understand what this is all about
6 or whether we should, but we're giving it to you as
7 evidence for whatever it's worth.

8 MS. PACE: Well, what they have here is a list of
9 charges to declare this person suppressive. That's
10 basically what it is. It's hard to go over the whole
11 thing and --

12 MR. LeCHER: Well, okay.

13 MR. FLYNN: Maybe Mr. Walters would like to explain
14 a little bit of it, Mayor.

15
16 EDWARD WALTERS, Resumed.

17 MR. LeCHER: As I said, it's a very light copy,
18 Mr. Walters, but hopefully you can read most of it.

19 MRS. GARVEY: What is --

20 MR. WALTERS: It's a standard comment, meaning
21 Committee of Evidence for a -- we've seen lots of these.
22 These are the standard charges taken out of the Book
23 of Ethics and Policies, because he's probably criticized
24 the upper seniors. So, now he's guilty of suppressing

1 Scientology.

2 I might mention one thing, only because of my
3 experience in the Guardian's Office. It looks very real
4 and everything, but be careful for dead agenting, meaning
5 something that is sent to you -- and this guy may not
6 even exist. It does look real because I -- I mean, this
7 is the standard copy.

8 But just be careful. You're dealing with a very
9 clever outfit. Anyway, I just wanted to mention that.

10 Dead agenting means that they all know you're doing
11 an investigation. So, they will send one of your
12 Commissioners a letter by a so-called Scientologist. And
13 that Scientologist will meet with you and you'll bring
14 him to the hearings, and he will turn you around just as
15 that guy from El Salvador just turned the government
16 around. It's called dead agenting. And then, of course,
17 you will not be believed.

18 It comes from the -- as Ron told us on tapes, it
19 comes from the early days when an agent would tell the
20 king something and, then, they'd find out he was lying
21 and they'd kill the agent. So, if you give a guy false
22 information and you find it false, Mayor, then, you
23 wouldn't talk to that fellow again, would you?

24 So, I -- just be careful of that. This is a very

1 intelligent operation.

2 MR. SHOEMAKER: Who would that normally be dis-
3 tributed to, Mr. Walters?

4 MR. WALTERS: This goes worldwide: to every org.
5 and mission in the world.

6 MR. SHOEMAKER: But would an individual member see
7 that or --

8 MR. WALTERS: Oh, yes. This is how they know to
9 stay away from him, do not talk to him. He will be
10 treated very degradedly. And he will quickly want to do
11 the conditions and praise Hubbard forever.

12 MR. LeCHER: Thank you.

13
14 ROSIE PACE, Resumed.

15 MR. LeCHER: One more question: Didn't it occur
16 to you that the education -- being a young woman yourself,
17 and at thirteen, didn't it occur to you that this is
18 wrong to have a young -- an organization to have a group
19 of their youth being functional illiterates?

20 MS. PACE: Yes.

21 Up until a few years ago, I really didn't think
22 about it. I thought Scientology was the most important
23 thing you could do. And I didn't believe that education
24 was harmful, but I thought Scientology was more important.

1 But recently, I've been looking and I've seen Lori's
2 little girl, my niece. And she is -- she's going through
3 what I'm -- what I had gone through, catching up on work
4 and -- just because of a Scientology school, that now she
5 has to go back two grades when she's a brilliant child.

6 So, now, it makes absolutely no sense. It's
7 harmful. You know, I believe in education.

8 MR. LeCHER: When did you first think that Mr. --
9 Ron's, as you have referred to him, background was sus-
10 pect?

11 MS. PACE: I didn't think about his background
12 up until, maybe, three months ago when I actually saw
13 things. I just knew there were terrible outnesses in
14 the organization, and I knew that -- I knew that he was
15 behind it.

16 MR. LeCHER: That what was behind it?

17 MS. PACE: I knew that he was behind it. I just
18 didn't have any proof.

19 MR. LeCHER: You just didn't question --

20 MS. PACE: I just thought it was the organization
21 was insane. I thought L. Ron Hubbard didn't know any-
22 thing about it. This is up until a couple of years
23 ago.

24 MR. LeCHER: So, until three months ago, you still

1 thought L. Ron Hubbard was a nuclear physicist, an
2 engineer, a war hero --

3 MS. PACE: Yes.

4 MR. LeCHER: -- and he cured his own blindness?

5 MS. PACE: Yes.

6 MR. LeCHER: Thank you.

7 Mr. Calderbank.

8 MR. CALDERBANK: Yeah.

9 Hi, Rosie.

10 MS. PACE: Hello.

11 MR. CALDERBANK: In your education background, do
12 you -- Scientology encouraged you to leave at thirteen --

13 MS. PACE: Yes.

14 MR. CALDERBANK: -- to get out of the public school
15 system?

16 MS. PACE: Yes.

17 MR. CALDERBANK: Did they ever give you, after
18 that, any regimented -- or any type of education in math,
19 reading, English, literature, anything that you would
20 expect in the New York school system?

21 MS. PACE: No.

22 MR. CALDERBANK: Is -- you also heard Lori's testi-
23 mony.

24 MS. PACE: Yes.

1 MR. CALDERBANK: Can you substantiate what she
2 said about her daughter, her test scores, what percentile
3 she's in compared to what she's been able to achieve?

4 MS. PACE: Yes.

5 MR. CALDERBANK: And she also mentioned that Scien-
6 tology, basically, does not want people to get an educa-
7 tion in the public realm.

8 MS. PACE: Right.

9 MR. CALDERBANK: Would you say that it's a common
10 policy in Scientology to keep people out of public school
11 to get an education?

12 MS. PACE: I would say so. They look down on
13 education.

14 MR. CALDERBANK: In your own personal experience,
15 do you fear for children that enter Scientology that they
16 are not, in your own personal experience, getting the
17 education that's required?

18 MS. PACE: Yes.

19 MR. CALDERBANK: In auditing -- you said you were
20 a very high level auditor.

21 MS. PACE: Yes.

22 MR. CALDERBANK: This is one of the largest ways
23 that money comes into the organization?

24 MS. PACE: Yes, it is.

1 MR. CALDERBANK: And you said that each person that
2 you audited felt that he or she -- their auditing informa-
3 tion was confidential?

4 MS. PACE: Yes, they believed it was confidential.

5 MR. CALDERBANK: And you believed and they believed,
6 also, that it was based on scientific work and research
7 data?

8 MS. PACE: I believe so.

9 MR. CALDERBANK: Well, would any of these people
10 have bought or purchased auditing if they were told that
11 the files would not be confidential?

12 MS. PACE: I don't -- no.

13 MR. CALDERBANK: They would not?

14 MS. PACE: I don't think so.

15 MR. CALDERBANK: In your opinion --

16 MS. PACE: In my opinion.

17 MR. CALDERBANK: -- as an experienced auditor and
18 one of the highest auditors that Scientology bestows on
19 someone?

20 MS. PACE: Yes.

21 MR. CALDERBANK: Have you ever seen a NED for OTs
22 or NOTS rally?

23 MS. PACE: A NOTS --

24 MR. CALDERBANK: A NOTS rally.

1 MS. PACE: No. Oh, yes, I have; I'm sorry.

2 MR. CALDERBANK: You have?

3 MS. PACE: Yes.

4 MR. CALDERBANK: And you saw the money that would
5 come in for these services?

6 MS. PACE: Yes.

7 MR. CALDERBANK: If those people found out that Mr.
8 Hubbard spent no years researching, would they spend the
9 twenty-five thousand -- up to twenty-five to forty thou-
10 sand dollars for the courses if they were told that he
11 did no research?

12 MS. PACE: In my opinion, no.

13 MR. CALDERBANK: Would they -- if told that he had
14 flunked out of science courses, would they pay this money?

15 MS. PACE: I don't know. I don't think so.

16 MR. CALDERBANK: I just want your personal opinion.

17 MS. PACE: Okay.

18 MR. CALDERBANK: And did they ever tell you that
19 the auditing would cure your physical headaches?

20 MS. PACE: Yes.

21 MR. CALDERBANK: They --

22 MS. PACE: I was told, when I joined the Sea Org.
23 three years ago in Los Angeles. I told my recruiter tha
24 I get severe headaches. And he said, "Don't worry about

1 it." He said, "NED for OTs handles that right away."

2 He said, "No problem."

3 So, I joined the Sea Org.

4 MR. CALDERBANK: So, based on his promise to cure
5 your headaches, you spent the money or gave your work to
6 get into NED for OTs?

7 MS. PACE: Yes.

8 MR. CALDERBANK: Did they ever say anything that
9 they could do anything with your eyesight?

10 MS. PACE: No.

11 MR. CALDERBANK: And you were -- when you were --
12 the last area of questioning is: When you were in the
13 Sea Organization and you were being recruited into the
14 organization -- I heard testimony that people were told
15 that they would have nice living conditions, they would
16 make up to seven hundred dollars per week.

17 Did these kinds of ideas go through your mind, at
18 first?

19 MS. PACE: I couldn't much use these living con-
20 ditions. I knew that I would be in a dorm. I didn't
21 know that there would be roaches and no air conditioner
22 and ten people in the room. But I knew I would be in a
23 dorm; I thought maybe with three girls.

24 MR. CALDERBANK: Did they tell you that by policy

1 that it would be a type of rigorous, military regimen?

2 MS. PACE: I knew that before I joined.

3 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Berfield, do you have any --

4 MS. PACE: Before I joined the Sea Org., yes.

5 MR. BERFIELD: Just a few.

6 Someone that testified earlier, I think, has brought
7 out a point that's been uppermost in my mind, and that is,
8 people that have come forward to this legislative hearing.

9 What motivated you to come here?

10 MS. PACE: I believe that people should be told
11 the truth, especially, Scientologists. And I hope they're
12 listening to these hearings.

13 From personal experience, what I have gone through
14 in the past few months, wanting to leave and thinking
15 that I actually couldn't leave the organization is a
16 horrible feeling. And I've been going through absolute
17 hell these past few months. And I want Scientologists
18 to know that they could speak up; they could give an
19 opinion; they can have their own thoughts; they can do
20 what they want.

21 That's why I'm here. Including my husband -- I
22 want him to -- he's been put on the RPF just recently.
23 He called me last week, and he thinks it's great that
24 he's going to be put on the RPF now. And I hate to see

1 these things go on, because I believe that the RPF is
2 a place where you really get brainwashed. You work day
3 and night and you get intense auditing.

4 That's why I'm here: just to let Scientologists
5 know that they can speak up.

6 MR. BERFIELD: I -- this is a little side issue,
7 but I take it that you and your husband are still in
8 love, then?

9 MS. PACE: I love my husband.

10 MR. BERFIELD: A couple of questions: You said that
11 you had taught these auditing courses.

12 Did you use books in those?

13 MS. PACE: I have never taught a Scientology
14 course. That was my sister, Lori.

15 MR. BERFIELD: Have you ever read any of these --
16 just -- this Dianetics, have you ever read that?

17 MS. PACE: Yes.

18 MR. BERFIELD: Just from your own personal experi-
19 ence, having read it previously - and if I understand
20 your testimony that you have given up Scientology --

21 MS. PACE: Yes.

22 MR. BERFIELD: -- how much truth or value would you
23 put in this book?

24 MS. PACE: I haven't seen any truth in the book.

1 From applying it, from being an auditor, I have never
2 seen someone be cured of an illness in all the experi-
3 ence that I have had.

4 I wasn't a supervisor. I didn't teach the courses,
5 but I was an auditor for about fifteen years.

6 MR. BERFIELD: Looking back in retrospect - and I
7 realize it's hard for you now, but - if you had to define
8 or describe Scientology, how would you describe it?

9 MS. PACE: As a harmful cult.

10 MR. BERFIELD: Do you -- in their solicitation
11 program for these various courses, is there any deception
12 in it?

13 MS. PACE: Yes.

14 MR. BERFIELD: How so?

15 MS. PACE: I believe they promise things that don't
16 exist in Scientology. That goes as far as auditing and
17 their training.

18 MR. BERFIELD: On the -- I believe you also testi-
19 fied on the children that you did not have much to do with
20 the children over at --

21 MS. PACE: No, I didn't.

22 MR. BERFIELD: In reading various documents that
23 you've had there, how would you know personally whether
24 or not they were - for the sake of a better description -

1 corporate documents, something that came down from cor-
2 porate headquarters or Flag or whatever you wish to call
3 it?

4 MS. PACE: I'm sorry, I didn't get that.

5 Well, they have executive courses where you learn
6 policy, and they have technical courses where you learn
7 how to become an auditor. You read the policies, you
8 drill them, you get checked out by your supervisor, and
9 you apply the policy.

10 MR. BERFIELD: Could the policy be something that
11 Mr. Flynn wrote up or that I wrote up? How would you
12 know that the policy is --

13 MS. PACE: Well, a Scientologist would never doubt
14 that L. Ron Hubbard wrote it if his name was on it.

15 Just recently, I believe, people started to suspect
16 that possibly he wasn't writing policy.

17 MR. BERFIELD: You mean, if I wrote up a policy
18 and wrote "Hubbard" on it that you all would have believed
19 it at that time?

20 MS. PACE: Well, I couldn't answer that. It would
21 depend on what -- well, policies are written in a certain
22 way. L. Ron Hubbard has a way of writing things that's
23 very similar. So, I guess you would know by that.

24 MR. BERFIELD: But if it had his name on it, it was

1 gospel?

2 MS. PACE: Yes.

3 MR. SHOEMAKER: Mr. Berfield, I might -- I've
4 just -- I might help on this.

5 Could you explain what an HCO is?

6 MS. PACE: An HC -- what is --

7 MR. SHOEMAKER: Hubbard Coordinating Officer?

8 MS. PACE: Hubbard Communications Office?

9 MR. SHOEMAKER: Yes, in terms of where the
10 documents come from that you've been referring to. I
11 mean, it comes from there --

12 MS. PACE: Yes.

13 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- I understand that.

14 MR. BERFIELD: You mentioned, I believe, also, too,
15 that you have audited hundreds of thousands of people.

16 MS. PACE: Yes, thousands of people.

17 MR. BERFIELD: Thousands.

18 Did you at any time ever tell them that what they
19 were doing really wasn't going to help them?

20 MS. PACE: No.

21 MR. BERFIELD: Did you believe that, that it was
22 going to help them?

23 MS. PACE: Yes, I did.

24 MR. BERFIELD: And if I understand your testimony

1 now, you say that, in your own mind, it would not help
2 them?

3 MS. PACE: No.

4 MR. BERFIELD: Your sister -- you were talking
5 about her being blown.

6 Do you know for a fact how she returned to Clear-
7 water? By that, I mean -- let me clarify that. Was
8 she brought back under force or --

9 MS. PACE: No, she wasn't; no.

10 MR. BERFIELD: Have you ever had any contact with
11 anyone who had blown, personal contact?

12 MS. PACE: No.

13 MR. BERFIELD: Just one last question here or two:
14 I believe you also testified that you were told that --
15 someone told you that auditing or something could help
16 you with your headaches?

17 MS. PACE: Yes.

18 MR. BERFIELD: And you found out that this is not
19 correct, it did not?

20 MS. PACE: That is not correct.

21 MR. BERFIELD: Your -- again, your reason for not
22 leaving Scientology was all psycho and not physical; is
23 that correct?

24 MS. PACE: I believe it would have become physical

1 if I tried to leave. They have a practice of stopping
2 people from blowing. But most of it was mental.

3 I could have left; I could have walked out the
4 door.

5 MR. BERFIELD: In this thirteen odd years, something
6 had been installed in you -- or instilled in you that if
7 you left, you would be forcibly returned?

8 MS. PACE: I believed that.

9 MR. BERFIELD: Just one question and -- or two --
10 I asked your sister this: In the time you were in
11 Clearwater, there -- in your mind there was no one in
12 the City of Clearwater that you felt safe that you could
13 have turned to for help?

14 MS. PACE: When I was in Clearwater, I was very
15 much a Scientologist, even though this was going on and
16 I was very unhappy. And I would never go to anyone
17 except a Scientologist.

18 MR. BERFIELD: Could you turn to a physician or
19 a --

20 MS. PACE: No.

21 MR. BERFIELD: I'll leave you with this one: If
22 you could tell the people of Clearwater and they all
23 could hear you, what would you tell them?

24 MS. PACE: Well, I think I mentioned it earlier how

1 I feel about Scientology.

2 When I was in Clearwater at Flag, I hated the
3 city, and I dreaded coming back. And I look at it very
4 different now.

5 I think Scientology -- something should be done
6 about Scientology and I'm glad that the hearings are
7 going on. I'm glad the people are hearing the truth
8 of what goes on at the Fort Harrison. That is all.

9 MR. LeCHER: Before we adjourn -- or not adjourn,
10 we bring in the next witness, two quick ones: All the
11 thousands of people you audited, if they knew that Ron's
12 background was suspect, do you think they would have
13 allowed themselves to be audited or spend the money?

14 MS. PACE: I don't think so.

15 MR. LeCHER: You mentioned you're married and you
16 love your husband.

17 When you were married, did you live with him or did
18 you live in a dorm? You mentioned living in a dorm.

19 MS. PACE: I lived in a dorm when I came to Clear-
20 water; he wasn't with me.

21 MR. LeCHER: Oh. But you certainly -- when you are
22 married, you can live with your husband in --

23 MS. PACE: Yes, you can.

24 MR. LeCHER: -- in the same room?

1 MS. PACE: I -- yes. I didn't live in the Sea Org.
2 quarters when I was with my husband.

3 MR. LeCHER: Well, that's it.

4 Oh, why was your -- is your husband in the RPF?

5 MS. PACE: That's -- yeah, the RPF.

6 MR. LeCHER: The RPF, sorry.

7 MS. PACE: He called me last week and he --

8 MR. LeCHER: He called you?

9 MS. PACE: Yes.

10 It's known that we are going to get a divorce. He
11 said he couldn't possibly live with me now that I'm not
12 a Scientologist.

13 And when you're in the Sea Org., you're not allowed
14 to have sexual relations with anyone except your spouse.
15 And he had sexual -- sexual relations with someone, and
16 he gave that up at an auditing session. And that was
17 used against him and he was put on the RPF.

18 MR. LeCHER: You mean, the confessional told that?

19 MS. PACE: Yes, the confessional.

20 MR. LeCHER: I think I'd better leave that right
21 where it is.

22 Thank you for coming and being an excellent witness.

23 Would you like to bring in the next witness or do
24 you want --

1 MR. FLYNN: David Ray, please.

2 As a point of information, with regard to the
3 issues that relate to the confidentiality of auditing,
4 at the appropriate time extensive documentation will be
5 put into evidence concerning the use of auditing informa-
6 tion by the organization.

7 MR. CALDERBANK: Mr. Flynn, will any of your wit-
8 nesses after -- who will come up here after Rosie be high
9 level auditors or trained as auditors to the degree that
10 Rosie and her sister, Lori, have?

11 MR. FLYNN: There may -- I'd have to look through
12 my witness list. There may be one or two more auditors.
13 We've got different people for different purposes. We
14 haven't heard from any real GO people yet, except for
15 Mr. Walters who has knowledge. We haven't heard from
16 administrative people yet.

17 There may be one or two more who did some auditing,
18 but for the most part we want to get into some of the
19 more Guardian's Office type activities as the hearings
20 progress.

21 MR. LeCHER: Mr. David Ray.

22 Will you please be sworn in, sir?
23

24 DAVID RAY, a witness herein,

1 having first been duly sworn by a Clerk for the City of
2 Clearwater, was examined and testified as follows:

3 MR. LeCHER: Now, Mr. Ray, I have a few standard
4 questions I must ask, as I ask every witness, sir.

5 MR. RAY: Okay.

6 MR. LeCHER: Number one: Are you appearing here
7 today and testifying under oath voluntarily?

8 MR. RAY: Yes.

9 MR. LeCHER: Have you been paid by anyone for your
10 testimony, other than expenses for coming to Clearwater?

11 MR. RAY: No, I have not.

12 MR. LeCHER: Do you have a lawsuit against the
13 Church of Scientology?

14 MR. RAY: No, I don't.

15 MR. LeCHER: Does the Church of Scientology have a
16 lawsuit against you?

17 MR. RAY: Not yet.

18 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

19 Has anyone suggested to you that you should state
20 anything but the truth or has anyone suggested that you
21 change your testimony for any reason?

22 MR. RAY: No, they have not.

23 MR. LeCHER: Thank you.

24 Mr. Ray, would you like to make a statement or go

1 through your background or do you want to be led through
2 it?

3 MR. RAY: I'd like to make a statement.

4 MR. LeCHER: Certainly. Go ahead.

5 MR. RAY: Okay.

6 This began back in about October or November of
7 1980. I was living in San Diego at the time with my
8 mother and my two sisters.

9 My mother got into Scientology and --

10 MR. LeCHER: Will you speak up in order that people
11 in the back of the room can hear you?

12 MR. RAY: Sure.

13 MR. LeCHER: How old are you, by the way?

14 MR. RAY: Eighteen.

15 MR. LeCHER: Eighteen.

16 MR. RAY: Back in about November of 1980, my mother
17 started telling us - me and my two sisters - about Scien-
18 tology, that she had been in it for a while and she was
19 going to start applying the technology in her company.
20 And I didn't think anything of it. And I just said,
21 "Okay. Well, let's see what you got?"

22 Well, right away it started creating serious con-
23 flicts between my mother and my stepfather at the time,
24 her husband. And they started having a lot of fights

1 about it because they had their own company called
2 San Diego Computer Dynamics, which is in San Diego. And
3 so, I was a little bit skeptical about it.

4 Well, three or four months later, they divorced.
5 And my mother said, "Well, I'd like you to do the puri-
6 fication rundown," which is to clean out your body. And
7 the purification rundown, what you do is you take a lot
8 of vitamins, run one or two miles, then, sit in a sauna
9 and sweat for about five and-a-half hours every day.
10 And it's very rigorous and very rough.

11 Well, I went ahead and did it to try and clean
12 out my body and started going down to the organization,
13 the Scientology Organization in San Diego, and checking
14 into courses and so on and so forth. And I took two
15 courses down there, the Communication course and the
16 Essentials of Dianetics Zero down there.

17 And one of the recruiters in the organization came
18 up to me and said, "Would you like to join staff? You
19 get all your courses and all your training for free."
20 And I was really turned on by what he had to say because
21 it appeared to me to be all logic. The books he had
22 written appeared to me to be all logic and what goes on
23 in your head. And I said, "Okay, terrific."

24 So, I had plans to join staff March 1st. Well, I

1 did, and started working there. It was -- it was pretty
2 easy work, nothing real big to do. I was studying a
3 couple hours a day and I was enjoying myself.

4 Well, about March 8th, they came to me and said --

5 MR. LeCHER: What year was this?

6 MR. RAY: 1981.

7 About March --

8 MR. LeCHER: A year ago -- a year ago, then.

9 MR. RAY: Yes.

10 MR. LeCHER: A little over a year ago.

11 MR. RAY: Okay.

12 March 8th, 1981, I believe that's the date, my
13 supervisor who was -- his name was David Horrigan. He
14 was in charge of Division Six, Public Division in that --

15 MR. LeCHER: Horgan?

16 MR. RAY: Horrigan.

17 MR. LeCHER: H-o-r-g-a-n?

18 MR. RAY: H-o-r-r-i-g-a-n.

19 MR. LeCHER: H-o-r-r-i-g-a-n.

20 MR. RAY: Okay.

21 He said, "We'd like to post you, put you on a job
22 to fill up our basic course room with public people."
23 And I said, "Okay. What do you want me to do?" He
24 said, "Well, get on the phone and call people. Call your

1 friends, tell them how great Scientology is, and get them
2 in here so we get some money in here." And he says, "If
3 you can do that in four months, we'll give you any course,
4 any position in this organization you want."

5 Well, I started and it took me about three days to
6 do it. And that really blew their minds. And at that
7 time there were some Sea Org. recruiters from here, from
8 Clearwater, in the organization looking for people to take
9 to the Sea Org. here in Clearwater. And they saw me and
10 they got a hold of that, and they said, "Ah, we want this
11 guy."

12 So, they came and they talked to me and -- so,
13 they laid out a contract. Now, I'm going to explain to
14 you this contract. It gets very, very personal with your
15 life. They want to know everything about you from when
16 you were born till present day; and they talk to you.

17 The contract goes like this: They want to know if
18 you've ever taken any drugs, specifically, LSD, okay?
19 They're very concerned about that. If you've taken LSD,
20 they don't want you, okay? They even go as far as to
21 ask you: "Have you had any sexual relationships? How
22 many? With whom? What schools have you gone to through
23 your life? What were your teachers' names? What were
24 your grades? Where have you lived? What were your

1 addresses? How many times were your parents married?
2 If they were divorced, what were their names, what were their
3 addresses? Stepchildren you live with? Friends you had."
4 All those names; they want everything.

5 And by the way, the contract says, "I join the
6 Sea Org." -- when you put your name on it, you join it
7 for a billion years or so it says, which was a little
8 beyond my comprehension.

9 So, after I had agreed to go into the Sea Organiza-
10 tion, I did have some debts. You can't go if you have
11 any debts. All right, you have to do something to pay
12 off your debts. So, I sold my car at the time; I had a
13 jeep and that paid off my debts.

14 And it took about -- from the time I started talking
15 to them till the time I was actually in Clearwater was
16 about thirty-two hours, okay? It was really incredible.

17 And I arrived here in Clearwater just thinking,
18 "This is going to be great," and I had the feeling I was
19 doing something to the benefit of every person on this
20 planet, okay? And that's what they led me to believe. I
21 want to make this point.

22 So, I got here. I was -- I was allowed to sleep
23 a little bit because I had been traveling all day. They
24 woke me up and they said, "Okay. You have to do a routing

1 form and you have to go meet these people and sign this
2 and sign that. And then, you have twenty-four hours
3 off to go look around the city and do whatever you want."
4 And I said, "Terrific."

5 So, they woke me up. I got -- saw two people on
6 my routing form. All of a sudden, they pulled me in and
7 said, "David, we need you to work." I said, "No
8 problem."

9 So, I went into the auditorium that they have there
10 and they were setting up an event for March 13th, which is
11 Ron Hubbard's birthday. And I worked and I worked,
12 lifting these platforms. They weigh about three hundred
13 pounds each, okay? And there was me and one girl lifting
14 these. And it was very strenuous.

15 And this went on for about six or seven hours and
16 I was getting very tired because I hadn't had much
17 sleep. And I says, "Well, can I go finish my routing
18 form, and can I go get some sleep or something? I'm
19 tired; I'm not going to be able to last much longer."
20 Right away, "No, you can't. You have to work because we
21 have to have this done."

22 MR. LeCHER: Who said, "No," the girl?

23 Forget the question.

24 MR. RAY: No. The supervisor at the time, Gary

1 Wasberg is his name, okay? He's the New Staff Control
2 Officer, NSCO abbreviation.

3 And so, I went ahead and worked, and right away
4 that sent my mind going around and around in circles,
5 thinking "Wait a minute," you know. "Are these guys
6 really for real?" Okay? I had a contract when I came
7 over there. I had been promised things like twenty-five
8 dollars a week to start, okay? I would work about eight
9 hours a day like a normal job, all your training and all
10 your processing, which is auditing, basically, for free.

11 Well, after that evening - I worked about a total
12 of nine, ten hours that day, the first day - and I went
13 to sleep. The next morning I got up and did the routing
14 form. And by the time I got to the Treasury Department,
15 I found out that until I did what they call Project 0
16 and Project 1, which entails about twelve courses, long
17 courses, that I was only going to make \$9.60 a week. I
18 said, "Wait a minute. This isn't right. This is not
19 what I was told; this is not what I agreed to," okay?
20 And they said, "Well," you know, "we don't know what
21 your recruiter told you, but this is the way it is." So,
22 I had to accept it.

23 And about day two -- when I first came there, they
24 put me in a room by myself, which was really nice and I

1 appreciated that. Day two they said, "Okay, we're going
2 to take you to where you're going to bunk. Now, this is
3 an exec -- this is a room for executive people in the
4 Church of Scientology, okay? You're new here, don't talk
5 to them." And I said, "What?" And they said, "Don't
6 talk to them." I said, "Okay."

7 So, I walked into the room, and when that door
8 opened that was it. The air was so thick and the stench
9 was so bad it just about knocked me over. So, I walked
10 in the room and I was just thinking, "You got to be" --

11 MR. LeCHER: Thick with what and what kind of
12 stench?

13 MR. RAY: Body odor.

14 And I walked in and the room was about twelve feet
15 by sixteen feet, not including the bathroom; there was
16 a small bathroom there which was a mess. But there were
17 four bunks on each side. Eight people in that room had
18 all their clothes, all their belongings in that room.
19 There were boxes with papers, dirty clothes piled up
20 from the ceiling to the floor -- floor to ceiling, excuse
21 me, and all over the place and there wasn't much room to
22 move around.

23 And there were cockroaches -- like, I'm from the
24 west coast, and I'd never seen palmetto bugs, and to me

1 that's just a giant cockroach.

2 MR. LeCHER: They are to us, too, but we call them
3 palmetto bugs; it sounds better.

4 MR. RAY: So, to get the basics over: When I was
5 first there, I got extremely skeptical about the whole
6 thing, all right? I didn't know what to believe and what
7 not to believe because I had been lied to on five
8 different occasions so far. I didn't know what else was
9 a lie.

10 So, when they said, "We'd like to put you into an
11 auditing chair and start auditing you," I said, "No way."
12 They said, "Why not?" I said, "Because I keep getting
13 different stories from different people. I've been lied
14 to, and I'm not going to sit there and let you guys do
15 something to me and I don't know what it's all about."
16 I said, "I'll read anything you want me to read, but I
17 won't sit in that chair."

18 So, they sent me to Ethics. So, I went into Ethics
19 and they said -- they have a thing called overts and
20 withholds, all right? And what that is is if you do
21 something --

22 MRS. GARVEY: Overts and what?

23 MR. LeCHER: Overts and what?

24 MR. RAY: Overts and withholds.

1 MR. LeCHER: Oh, overts --

2 MRS. GARVEY: Okay.

3 MR. LeCHER: -- and withholds.

4 MR. RAY: Right.

5 MRS. GARVEY: Okay.

6 MR. RAY: Okay?

7 And overts is when you do something that you know
8 to be against your own ethical code or moral code, okay,
9 and you hold it within your head, okay, and you just keep
10 it there. That's an overt. And withhold is holding it
11 there.

12 So, they took me in there and said, "Okay. Start
13 writing up all your overts and withholds. We want to
14 know all about it." Okay. So, I started --

15 MR. LeCHER: That -- wait. That may be a belief,
16 and I'm advised it's getting dangerous. So, let's --

17 MRS. GARVEY: Well, he's just explaining a series
18 of events.

19 MR. LeCHER: Is it all right, Mr. Flynn? I don't
20 know where it's going to end up.

21 MR. FLYNN: Go ahead. I think we can go forward.
22 Tell them why -- what they told you --

23 MR. RAY: The reason I was writing up these overts
24 and withholds, they told me, was because I refused their

1 processing. They're not used to that. They --

2 MR. LeCHER: That may be to the benefit -- that may
3 be considered religious. It may be like "What is a sin?"
4 And we don't really want to know what it says.

5 MR. RAY: Excuse me.

6 MR. LeCHER: Yes.

7 MR. RAY: They never indicated to me that it was
8 religious. They never indicated to me that that was a
9 religious belief, okay? From day one, when I got into
10 Scientology, I was instructed that this was - their
11 auditing and their tech - was scientifically proven to
12 work, all right? From day one I was told that, and I
13 was told that all along, okay?

14 So, I wrote up these overts and withholds and I
15 handed it to the guy that was handling this Ethics
16 Cycle, okay? And he looked at it and he's going, "Okay.
17 Well, you've got to do this and this and this." And
18 what he was telling me was I've got to do work, physical
19 labor. They call it "mest work." M-e-s-t stands for
20 matter, energy, space, and time, okay? So, I had to do
21 physical labor.

22 So, they said, "We're going to put you in the house-
23 keeping section." So, they put me in the housekeeping
24 section, gave me a cart, you know, and loaded it all up.

1 I had to go clean public rooms.

2 Well, when I first started, they gave me a whole
3 floor to do by myself, which is about, oh, I'd say,
4 thirty-one, thirty-two rooms, all right? I -- "How do
5 you expect me to finish these?" Okay. And they said,
6 "Well, you're one of the top beings on this planet.
7 That's why you're here, and you've got to do it." I
8 said, "You've got to be kidding."

9 MR. LeCHER: Ladies and gentlemen, please. It may
10 be humorous, but we don't want to laugh and make a circus
11 of these hearings. This is important and we want to keep
12 some decorum.

13 Yes, Mr. Ray.

14 MR. RAY: Okay, well, I gave it my best shot. I
15 finished it; it took me about, oh, twelve, thirteen hours.
16 And it was very hard on me physically, because the
17 weather here in Florida gets incredibly hot. There's no
18 air conditioning in the building. In the public rooms,
19 they had small air conditioners, okay, but none in the
20 hallways and so forth. There is no air conditioning.

21 It's a regular hotel room, the public rooms.

22 MR. LeCHER: So, public rooms are hotel rooms?

23 MR. RAY: Yeah, they're regular hotel rooms.

24 MRS. GARVEY: For people who come to --

1 MR. LeCHER: That's a public --

2 MRS. GARVEY: As opposed to a staff member?

3 MR. RAY: Yeah, as opposed to a --

4 MR. LeCHER: They clean in the restaurants and --

5 MR. RAY: Right. Staff members work and run the
6 hotel, okay, and deliver the processing and training.
7 The public are the ones that they have come in and get
8 the money from.

9 MR. LeCHER: Can the public go in those rooms?
10 We, the public.

11 MRS. GARVEY: Can we, the general public, walk
12 through --

13 MR. LeCHER: Can we, the public, walk into those
14 public rooms?

15 MR. RAY: They claim you can, okay? They claim
16 that any public person, anybody off the street, can walk
17 in, look around like a regular hotel. But I have found
18 that not to be true.

19 I was friends with the security guard down at
20 the front door; his name was Alex -- I don't remember
21 his last name. And somebody came by off the streets,
22 was just looking around, and read "A Religious Retreat
23 for the Church of Scientology." He wanted to go and
24 look around. Well, they quickly -- him, and they called

1 another security guard, grabbed him on each arm and
2 escorted him out very quickly. And that's the story
3 about looking around. But -- okay.

4 MR. LeCHER: Continue, then, with your travelogue.

5 MR. RAY: Okay.

6 So, then -- instead of going into real big detail
7 on this anymore -- after working and doing all these
8 rooms that I was required to do - and I did get them
9 done and I did work hard - they promoted me, okay? And
10 I was in charge of the housekeeping services for all of
11 the hotel.

12 And what they didn't tell me was -- they said,
13 "Well, yeah, you're going to be able to tell these
14 people what to do." I thought I was going to sit down
15 and do paperwork, okay? Well, no. My rooms -- my room
16 quota each day went from thirty-two to seventy-eight,
17 okay?

18 MR. LeCHER: That's a promotion.

19 MR. RAY: That's a promotion.

20 So, they have -- on the contract, they say, "If
21 your statistics are up" -- let me -- let me explain
22 that. Every time you clean a room, you leave a little
23 piece of paper in there that says my name, you know,
24 "I'm your housekeeper," and there's numbers by these

1 words. One says, "Incredible," you know, "Okay, Good,
2 Bad, Terrible," and they've got to circle a number by
3 the word that they feel how the room was cleaned, okay?
4 Well, you pick these up each day and drop them off. And
5 that's how they calculate your statistics; you add up
6 the numbers, divided by the numbers that you have, and
7 there's your number, okay? It's on average.

8 Well, if your statistics are up, every two weeks
9 you're supposed to have twenty-four hours off, called
10 liberty. It's more like the Navy than anything else.
11 Well, since they were shorthanded, I would keep asking
12 them for my time off because I was working, oh, anywhere
13 from eighteen to twenty hours a day. I wasn't getting
14 much sleep; I was very tired all the time. And they
15 wouldn't give it to me. They said, "No. We can't --
16 we can't afford to let you go. These rooms won't get
17 clean."

18 Well, I wanted the rooms to get clean and I wanted
19 to be able -- the public, you know, to have what they're
20 paying for. So, I went ahead and did it. Well, that
21 went on for about nine weeks, okay?

22 And one day I said, "Uh-huh, I'm leaving." And I
23 took off. I took my day off. I just went down to the
24 beach and slept on the beach, walked around, got a

1 suntan. And when I came back, oh-oh. They were angry
2 with me. They said, "David, you're going to have to go
3 to Ethics and write up your overts and withholds again."
4 So, I did that.

5 The thing that -- the thing that really kills me
6 about this whole -- this whole operation is they -- by
7 the questions they ask and the things they do, they
8 open you up to your innermost personal self, okay? And
9 as I'm sure all of you have done at one time or another,
10 opened yourself up, you're extremely vulnerable, all
11 right? They'll pick you up and they'll raise you so high
12 you feel like you're on top of the world and, then,
13 they'll drop you and they'll let you feel like a bottom-
14 less pit, all right? And those are the kinds of terror
15 and searing emotions that go through a person's mind
16 when they're there, okay?

17 They want to leave; they want to help themselves.
18 You get physically tired. Sometimes, you don't even have
19 time to take a shower. Ninety percent of the people
20 that walk around there just -- they stink; they're not
21 clean, okay? The people there are not clean. The
22 building is not clean. The building is an extreme fire
23 hazard, okay? They have boxes stacked up all over the
24 place. Out in the garage they have old furniture just

1 dumped out there, mattresses piled up, or they had this
2 when I was there, all right? And if that would have been
3 ignited, there would have been a lot of people killed,
4 a lot of people. They have a very old fire alarm system.

5 They told us there as staff members, if you saw
6 a fire somewhere, run down to reception, let them know.
7 They've got to run around behind -- there's a reception
8 room. They had to go around behind it, flip the switch
9 for the alarm system, get on the phone and call the fire
10 department, all right?

11 Well, two things: Number one, they only had one
12 elevator in operation at that time; they had three ele-
13 vators there. It's certainly slow and certainly crowded,
14 okay, because you're talking about - at the Fort Harrison
15 itself - about four hundred staff members and three
16 hundred public, okay? That's seven hundred people.
17 And -- with one elevator in operation.

18 So, if you saw a fire, it was quicker to run down
19 the stairs. Well, that still takes time. Hypothetical
20 situation: If a fire would have broken out on the
21 seventh floor - there's ten floors - my guess is that
22 that seventh floor and the floor above it, the eighth
23 floor, would have been an inferno by the time that alarm
24 would have been set off, okay, for the amount of steps.

1 Also, they packed people that were coming in --
2 they sent -- they have people come in here to Clearwater
3 from organizations and missions all over the world to
4 do what's called the Flag Executive Briefing Course,
5 FEBC for short. And it was supposed to help them to go
6 back to their own organizations and get more people into
7 the organization, therefore, bring in more money. This
8 was all based on money, okay? "How much income we could
9 get."

10 Every week, when we had a staff meeting, "How much
11 money did we get?" That was the first thing; everything
12 was secondary to that, all right?

13 Well, as these students came in, a guy that I
14 bunked with was in charge of putting these people in
15 their rooms. His name was Mike Gravell; he's the
16 Commanding Officer of Area Estates Org. And he was
17 putting in a room, twelve by sixteen, twenty-five
18 people to one room and all of their belongings.

19 MR. LeCHER: Twenty-five -- twelve by sixteen?

20 MR. RAY: Yes. Twenty-five people --

21 MR. LeCHER: In this city?

22 MR. RAY: In this city.

23 MR. LeCHER: In the Fort Harrison?

24 MR. RAY: In the Fort Harrison.

1 MR. LeCHER: What floor?

2 MR. RAY: Third, fourth, and fifth.

3 MR. LeCHER: Third, fourth, and fifth. Have you
4 got that, Mr. Shoemaker?

5 MR. RAY: This began in the beginning of May
6 and was really starting to get going when I left, okay?
7 And my guess is that it's going on now just as strong as
8 ever.

9 MR. LeCHER: Third, fourth, and fifth?

10 MR. RAY: Third, fourth, and fifth floors.

11 MR. LeCHER: How many restrooms to twenty-five
12 people?

13 MR. RAY: One.

14 MR. LeCHER: One.

15 So, there's just no way you can all possibly take
16 a shower, then. So, no wonder, your original statement
17 is probably correct.

18 MR. RAY: You had to take -- I walked into the
19 rooms occasionally to take pillows out of the rooms
20 because we didn't have enough for the public people,
21 so I would have to take them away from the staff.

22 Well, I looked on back of the door and they had
23 what's called a shower schedule. They started at six-
24 thirty. The first person went from six-thirty to six-

1 thirty-five; second person from six-thirty-five to six-
2 forty, okay, ongoing -- five-minute showers up to max
3 limit -- maximum.

4 MR. LeCHER: If someone took ten, it would ruin
5 the whole train.

6 MR. RAY: If someone took ten, they'd --

7 MRS. GARVEY: He'd get killed.

8 MR. RAY: Yeah, about five and-a-half, somebody
9 else would go in there and just yank him out.

10 MR. LeCHER: Okay. Continue.

11 MR. RAY: Well, what was going on through my mind
12 the whole time I was there, okay, is "If we're really
13 supposed to be helping clear this planet, okay, and
14 we're supposed to be benefitting everyone on this
15 planet, why are we only dealing with the people that
16 have money and lots of it," okay? And I would ask these
17 questions and I would get no answers, or no straight
18 answers anyway.

19 But I would notice from dealing with the public -
20 and I dealt with every public person who came in and out
21 of that building, all right - that people that were there
22 trying to get their training and processing to help
23 themselves and didn't have a whole lot of money would
24 get treated very badly. And they would. And the people

1 that came in there and had a whole lot of money and they
2 were there just spending money and showing off, you know,
3 whatever they -- they like to show off; they like to
4 flash their money. Those are the people that would get
5 special attention, okay?

6 And I was always getting instructions down from
7 the Accommodations Counselor to take care of these people
8 that had these big, fancy rooms and had lots of money,
9 you know, do anything they wanted to do, okay? And we'd
10 be moving refrigerators in and out of there with no dollies,
11 me and one other guy. We'd carry them up and down the
12 stairs. What does a refrigerator weigh, about three
13 hundred pounds? Okay.

14 MR. HATCHETT: Yes.

15 MR. RAY: And beds the same way, okay, up and down
16 stairs, no dollies. This -- on and on like this. And
17 I put in, like I said, eighteen, twenty hours a day.

18 And I'd complain about it and they'd give me a bad
19 time.

20 Another thing that really bothered me. When I
21 was in that room, I was what they considered a peon,
22 since I was brand new to the Sea Org., okay? All those
23 executives I lived with felt like they were high and
24 mighty, and they just loved to pick on me, okay, because

1 I asked them questions. And they would pick on me.

2 Well --

3 MR. LeCHER: What questions would you ask them?

4 MR. RAY: Oh, I asked them questions about the
5 money: how much money was coming in and out each week;
6 what kind of jobs they did, what their jobs entailed. I
7 wanted to know all I could. How come -- "How come you
8 guys aren't out there picking up the people on the
9 streets that don't have any money, okay, and showing them
10 how to make some money so they can do something with
11 themselves," okay? Stuff like that.

12 MR. LeCHER: How did they pick on you?

13 MR. RAY: Well, I'd be sitting in the chair, watch-
14 ing television, which was my favorite thing to do if --
15 any time off I had; I didn't sleep very much. And they'd
16 walk in there and pick me up out of the chair and put
17 me in another one and say, "I want this chair because
18 it's right in front of the TV set, and you can't say
19 nothing about it." And I'd say, "Oh, yeah?" Well, me,
20 you know, I'm -- I've got a fuse about that long, okay?
21 And I'd say something back and they'd strike at me, okay?

22 And I got into four physical fights on four differ-
23 ent occasions, one of which I was trying to leave and
24 take some time off, and he just hauled off and punched

1 me because he didn't know any better way to stop me.

2 MR. LeCHER: He -- you wanted to leave? You wanted
3 liberty again?

4 MR. RAY: Yes, I wanted to leave and --

5 MR. LeCHER: And he wanted to keep you in the Fort
6 Harrison Hotel?

7 MR. RAY: Yeah.

8 I wanted to leave and go down to the beach and get
9 some sleep. I could not sleep in that room. There were
10 bugs crawling all over the place; it smelled real bad.

11 One night - I was told by the guys in the room
12 it was a wolf spider - but one night I was laying there
13 and I kept feeling these little bites on my body. I
14 didn't know what it was, these little sharp pain things.
15 And so, I got up pretty early and decided to take a
16 shower, walked in, looked down, and the whole side of
17 my body was covered with blood. And so, I washed it
18 off and looked, and there were a whole bunch of little
19 bumps on my body. So, I walked back over to my bed
20 real quick, flipped back the covers, and there was this
21 huge, brown spider. And I smashed it, to say the least.

22 So, I went to the Medical Officer, and I started
23 running a fever. And I -- and there was no way I could
24 work. I needed to lay down and get some sleep. So, I

1 went in there, and he said, "What kind of overts and
2 withholds do you have about spiders?" Sick. And I
3 said, "Well, I just need to relax. Can I see a doctor?"
4 And he said, "No, you can't see a doctor." And he says,
5 "Anyway, can you afford it? How much money do you have?"
6 I said, "Well, I have about five dollars." He says,
7 "Well, we don't pay for your doctor's expenses. That's
8 something you're going to have to save for if you want to
9 see a doctor." Okay. "What we can do" --

10 MR. LeCHER: And you were making 8.60 a week at
11 this time?

12 MR. RAY: Nine-sixty.

13 MR. LeCHER: Nine-sixty.

14 MR. RAY: And it -- later on, it increased to
15 twelve dollars, but not during the time that I got sick.
16 Just about two months before I left, it went up to
17 twelve dollars and that's as high as it got.

18 So, the Medical Officer, he would not -- and his
19 name is Gary Pippenburg.

20 MR. LeCHER: Gary Pippenburg?

21 MR. RAY: Yes.

22 He -- at that time. He -- I think,
23 P-i-p-p-e-n-b-u-r-g, Pippenburg.

24 And he wouldn't do anything for me. And he said --

1 he says, "Well, why don't you go talk to your super-
2 visor. See if you can get some time off to lay down."

3 I went to talk to my supervisor and the second I --
4 that I mentioned that I was sick, okay, he got extremely
5 violent in his tone of voice to me and started yelling
6 at me and screaming at me, saying, you know, "Don't
7 get sick. We need you to work. You can't have any
8 time off, period. There's no way we're going to let
9 you have any time off." And I just said, "Wait a minute."

10 I was just too tired to argue. So, I would go
11 up with my cart, like I was cleaning rooms, and I would
12 open up one of the rooms that was empty and I'd lay down
13 and go to sleep. I was just so tired. There was -- I
14 could barely carry myself up the stairs, just barely
15 make it. And I'd go in there and go to sleep. And I
16 did that several times. And eventually - this was right
17 before I left - I wound up in the RPF, Rehabilitation
18 Project Force. And was I in for a surprise.

19 What it is is a group of people that have done
20 something, what they consider, against the Church of
21 Scientology, okay? The Rehabilitation Project Force is
22 the last thing they do to try to save your being before
23 they kick you out, okay? And I was scared to death to
24 be kicked out, because me, along with everybody else who's

1 there, has a basic need inside to do something good for
2 somebody else, okay? And we were led to believe that
3 we were doing something good for a whole lot of people,
4 and we didn't want to lose that. I didn't want to lose
5 that. So, I said, "Okay. I'll go into the RPF."

6 So, I went in there. And basically, what it is is
7 emptying all the garbage out of the restaurants, okay?
8 Restaurant garbage is wet; it's old food; it's got flies
9 and all kinds of bugs crawling around in it. And we
10 would pick up the cans, take them down to the garbage
11 dump, dump them into the garbage dump. And then, at the
12 end of the day, we'd have to go in there in our shoes
13 and stomp it down.

14 And I don't know what kind of diseases we were
15 exposed to, but we were getting some really wierd ones,
16 okay?

17 MR. LeCHER: Get inside the dumpster and stomp it?

18 MR. RAY: Yeah. It just literally -- I mean --

19 MR. LeCHER: It was too small or was that punish-
20 ment?

21 MR. RAY: No. The dumpster was too small.

22 And you'd get inside there and this restaurant
23 garbage would be just like quicksand. You'd go all the
24 way to the bottom. You'd be, you know, more than waist

1 deep in this stuff, all right, and it smelled awful.

2 And then, you'd have to go back and clean up, okay?

3 And the food that they served the RPFers was just
4 rotten. They served all the leftovers after all of the
5 staff on the whole base, all the buildings, ate, okay?
6 Then, we ate alone, whatever was left over. And it wasn't
7 very good. And it didn't give us the nourishment that
8 we needed to keep our bodies going.

9 MR. LeCHER: What would your typical diet consist
10 of after -- the leftovers?

11 MR. RAY: Good grief. It would be pieces -- some-
12 times, pieces of meat, pieces of beef or chicken or pork,
13 usually a salad and a drink. But the salad was wilted
14 and it smelled rotten, like, it had been -- you know,
15 somebody had dumped sour milk on it. The cheese was no
16 good. It was all molded, but molded to the point it
17 was fuzzy, you know, like a peach.

18 And one time they had french fries there, and I
19 picked up a handful of french fries and started eating
20 them and I found a french fried palmetto bug in my
21 french fries. And I wondered how many I had eaten, you
22 know, when I saw that one. So, I threw that out.

23 So, my diet, my personal diet -- I'd run across
24 the street and get myself a handful of cookies, and that's

1 basically what I lived on, cookies, because that's the
2 only decent thing that they had to eat, in my opinion.

3 MR. LeCHER: Where did you get the cookies?

4 MR. RAY: There's a little health food store
5 across the street from the Fort Harrison, right across
6 the street.

7 MR. LeCHER: Well, for 9.60 a week, I guess that's
8 all you could eat.

9 MR. RAY: Nine-sixty a week, I had to skimp a --
10 well, I smoke, okay, and I was smoking when I was there.
11 Nine-sixty a week will buy a carton of cigarettes and
12 maybe a tube of toothpaste, and that's it, not counting
13 soap, shampoo, any toiletries that you needed. If your
14 shoes wore out, you're going to have to get yourself a
15 new pair of shoes. If your pants wore out, you'd have
16 to get yourself a new pair of pants. And this just
17 doesn't cover it.

18 MR. LeCHER: Did you have family money that could
19 support you in this cause that you were involved in?

20 MR. RAY: Yes, my mother and my two sisters who
21 are still members of the Church of Scientology.

22 And I would like to -- I have a couple of things to
23 say about that. The biggest conflict I had coming over
24 here from the west coast to give my testimony is that my

1 mother and my two sisters are still involved in the
2 Church of Scientology. My mother is doing Advanced
3 Enlightenment courses. My sister is in the Sea Organiza-
4 tion in Hollywood/Los Angeles, okay? And my youngest
5 sister, Jennifer, who's fourteen, is living, you know,
6 at one of their hotels there called The Manor, and she
7 has not even gone to school this year, okay, because
8 they keep putting into her mind that schools are no
9 good. "You want Ron Hubbard's technology. That's all
10 you want, that's all you need. We'll graduate you,"
11 okay?

12 But what really bothers me is that that, aside
13 from my mother, is my whole family, okay? And this is
14 going to be publicized within the Church of Scientology,
15 and I'm going to lose that after today, all right? And
16 that just tears me apart. That's my family, okay?

17 This is -- this is the Church of Scientology's
18 advanced attack, whatever, is that they -- they attack
19 you on a personal level, okay? And that's the greatest
20 attack anybody could ever do is when they attack you on
21 a personal level. They could come up and punch you in
22 the mouth. Sure, it's going to sting for a while. And
23 if any of you have ever broken up with your girlfriend,
24 you know that hurts for a while. That hurts a lot longer

1 than a punch in the mouth, okay? And that's the way
2 they attack you.

3 All right.

4 MR. LeCHER: You've said so much, I --

5 MR. RAY: I'd like the opportunity to say something
6 about the Guardian's Office.

7 MR. LeCHER: I'd like to know about the Guardian's
8 Office.

9 MR. RAY: Okay.

10 Every two weeks on Sunday a representative from the
11 Guardian's Office Worldwide, which is here in Clear-
12 water -- I'm not sure where; I believe it's in Clear-
13 water Building, up around LRH personal office.

14 MR. LeCHER: In Clearwater -- the old bank, Clear-
15 water Building.

16 MR. RAY: Yeah. It's on the corner of Fort Harri-
17 son and Cleveland.

18 All right.

19 We had one briefing that I specifically remember,
20 and a specific case that we were told about.

21 Do you remember this big thing about Jonestown,
22 the Guyana cult?

23 MR. LeCHER: Yes.

24 MR. RAY: Okay.

1 Well, they stated to us that they had done
2 research into what happened there and that it was the
3 U.S. government that poisoned them with nerve gas, put
4 cyanide in the punch to make it look like that, just to
5 scare away Scientology. Okay. We were informed that,
6 led to believe that, and that was just pounded into our
7 heads. So, our feelings about the U.S. government were
8 not too good.

9 MR. HATCHETT: How old were you when you were in
10 Clearwater?

11 MR. RAY: I was seventeen years old at the time I
12 was there.

13 MR. LeCHER: You were seventeen at the time?

14 MR. RAY: Yes.

15 MR. LeCHER: Have you ever graduated from high
16 school?

17 MR. RAY: Yes, on the CHSPE, California High School
18 Proficiency Examination.

19 MR. LeCHER: Well, you seem like a very bright
20 young man and a very ambitious young man and a very
21 gutsy guy to do what you've done and get out and to
22 take the chance to lose your family, and I believe that
23 to be true.

24 Do you have any fears that your mother and sisters

1 may be given special duties to --

2 MR. RAY: Well --

3 MR. LeCHER: -- because of this?

4 MR. RAY: -- it's possible. I don't really want
5 to say because I don't know, okay?

6 The Church of Scientology doesn't scare me to the
7 point where I'm afraid of physical harm, okay? But they
8 do scare me in the fact that L. Ron Hubbard got so many
9 people, in the millions, okay, into this Scientology
10 organization. Each and every Sea Org. member is being
11 trained with LRH technology to understand and to think
12 like him, okay?

13 L. Ron Hubbard got all these millions of people
14 into this cult. As these people grow and develop in the
15 technology, can you imagine what two thousand L. Ron
16 Hubbards are going to do?

17 MR. LeCHER: Do you think, then, that they are
18 promoting and conceiving junior L. Ron Hubbards, future
19 L. Ron Hubbards? Is that what you're saying?

20 MR. RAY: Each and every Sea Org. member is a
21 future L. Ron Hubbard, each and every one.

22 MR. LeCHER: I'd like to know about the children.
23 I have here nursery with ten -- with five and ten chil-
24 dren playing on the floor and somebody -- were there

1 minors that were staying in Clearwater against their
2 parents' wishes?

3 MR. RAY: Yes, one specific that I know of.

4 MR. LeCHER: Tell me, specifically, what you know.

5 MR. RAY: Her name was Nadine Meader, M-e-a-d-e-r.
6 She was thirteen years old at the time I was there. And
7 one night she came to talk to me because we were friends,
8 we worked in the same organization. She was crying
9 because her parents had sent her a little nasty letter
10 about how they don't like the Church of Scientology, and
11 the second half of it was very loving on how they want
12 her back.

13 Well, she had shown that to a lady by the name of
14 Laurie Englehart, who was the Commanding Officer of
15 Public Estates Organization, okay? And she had given her
16 a lecture about how great Scientology is and how much
17 better off Scientology was than her parents. She was
18 just in tears; she didn't know what to do. It was
19 tearing her in half.

20 MR. LeCHER: How did she get there in the first
21 place at thirteen?

22 MR. RAY: I never found that out.

23 My guess is this: They do send out missions, okay,
24 with Sea Org. missionaries on recruiting missions. And

1 they go out; they go all over the world, okay, and they
2 find people and they talk to people. They'll talk to
3 anybody. They'll talk to somebody off the streets,
4 okay, and try to recruit them into the Church of
5 Scientology.

6 MR. LeCHER: It's just amazing to me how a child
7 can get involved. How would she be there against their
8 wishes? I mean, she's thirteen, without her parents'
9 consent, they want her back, they want her home, yet,
10 she's forced to stay there.

11 Is she still there today to your knowledge or has
12 she left?

13 MR. RAY: To my knowledge, she's still there.

14 The reason that she's there -- the reason you feel
15 the pressure is because they tap on that piece that's
16 inside of every one of us --

17 MR. LeCHER: Everybody has a button?

18 MR. RAY: -- to do good, okay? There's a part of
19 us in every one of us that wants to do some good for
20 other people, all right? And they pull on that, and
21 they tug it, and they twist it around and turn it upside
22 down till you don't know which way is up, all right?
23 And that's why you feel like, if you leave, you're
24 going to be condemned forever, okay. That's the way

1 they make you feel.

2 You feel like, if you leave, you're going to be
3 condemned forever. So, you don't want to leave no matter
4 how bad it gets.

5 MR. LeCHER: Tell me about the Cadet Org.

6 MR. RAY: All I know about the Cadet Org. is that
7 there are -- they are minors that are in that org.
8 They're -- what they consider minors is anybody under
9 sixteen. If you're over sixteen, you've got to work
10 like a regular staff member.

11 But they would do physical labor, hard physical
12 labor. They'd rotate from building to building and do
13 odd jobs. And they'd play video games all night. They'd
14 come back -- they'd get off work about four-thirty, and
15 there they'd be until two o'clock in the morning playing
16 video games. No schooling.

17 MR. LeCHER: Well, video games, are they being --
18 do you put a quarter in them or are they --

19 MR. RAY: You put a quarter in them.

20 MR. LeCHER: So, the children -- the children
21 have to get -- we worry about their license because we
22 have to license those machines in the City of Clearwater.
23 And apparently, we didn't even know they had video games.

24 Are there video games in the Fort Harrison Hotel?

1 MR. RAY: Yeah. They're in the Lemon Tree
2 Restaurant.

3 MR. LeCHER: At 8.60 a week --

4 MR. RAY: Nine-sixty.

5 MR. LeCHER: -- 9.60, you really can't play many
6 games at a quarter --

7 MR. RAY: No.

8 MR. LeCHER: -- all that long.

9 MR. CALDERBANK: Unless you're good.

10 MR. LeCHER: Unless you're good, as Mr. Calderbank
11 says.

12 Twenty percent of the staff are under twenty years
13 old; is that -- or about twenty years old?

14 MR. RAY: Yes. There are about -- there are some
15 staff members, Fred Hodgekinson is one and Ernie - I
16 don't remember his last name - but they work in the Engineer-
17 ing Department, and they do physical labor, and they're
18 about seventy years old, all right? And they give these
19 guys auditing and processing, you know, to help -- they've
20 got arthritis, okay?

21 One of them's got some serious back problems. Well,
22 they tell them that through this auditing, they'll cure
23 that so they can go ahead and work. And they push them
24 just as hard as they push anybody else. And I've seen

1 them collapse twice.

2 MR. LeCHER: The older people?

3 MR. RAY: Yes.

4 MR. LeCHER: If someone wanted to go there from
5 California or from Clearwater for that matter and had
6 money, a known money person, what would it cost them to
7 stay at the Fort Harrison Hotel with meals?

8 MR. RAY: With --

9 MR. LeCHER: Or without meals, however they charge.

10 MR. RAY: Okay.

11 With meals, with their room, and with their train-
12 ing or their processing, because that's why they're there,
13 it would come out to an average of a hundred dollars a
14 day or more --

15 MR. LeCHER: That's --

16 MR. RAY: That's very conservative. Per person,
17 okay. And there is an average of three hundred people
18 there at any one given time, public paying.

19 MR. LeCHER: How many?

20 MR. RAY: Three hundred.

21 MR. LeCHER: Three hundred.

22 What about poor people that are motivated but just
23 don't have the money?

24 MR. RAY: They leave them alone.

1 MR. LeCHER: What about blacks, minorities? Do
2 they cater to minority people?

3 MR. RAY: Yes, they do. It's -- there's not much
4 racial prejudice --

5 MR. LeCHER: They do not discriminate?

6 MR. RAY: No.

7 MR. LeCHER: But they do accept you if you're black?

8 MR. RAY: Well, I have only seen two black people
9 there, and no other race is there except for white people,
10 so I think, maybe, they're a little bit smarter than we
11 are.

12 MR. CALDERBANK: In other words, you're saying
13 they're street wise to the scam?

14 MR. RAY: What's that?

15 MR. CALDERBANK: They're street wise?

16 MR. HATCHETT: Street wise we call it. Street
17 wise, w-i-s-e.

18 MR. RAY: Okay. Explain it, please.

19 MR. HATCHETT: Street wise means, you just don't
20 go for the con games so fast, you can see through it.

21 MR. RAY: Right.

22 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

23 Ladies and gentlemen, let's get back to this now.

24 Were efforts made to keep city inspectors from

1 observing these things that exist, like overcrowding,
2 filth, staff quarters? Were efforts made to keep
3 inspectors from seeing staff accommodations and the
4 antiquated fire alarm systems?

5 MR. RAY: Yes, they were.

6 MR. LeCHER: How do they do something --

7 MR. RAY: Just a moment. Let me say one more thing
8 about the GO while it's fresh in my mind.

9 They would go around to the newsstands and buy up
10 the newspapers and burn them if there were any articles
11 against Scientology in them so that we would not see
12 them, okay?

13 Now, I got my hands on one while I was there. It
14 was an article called "Suetology." I don't know who it
15 was written by, but the head of this Suetology, his
16 name was L. Ron Blubbard, okay? It was really cute.
17 And I showed that around, and I got in a lot of trouble
18 for it, a lot of trouble. And that almost put me in the
19 RPF right there for doing that.

20 As far as the inspector comes -- somehow, the
21 Public Estates Org., through someone, got some informa-
22 tion that there was going to be a surprise inspection on
23 the Fort Harrison Hotel, and there was an all out effort
24 made to get it cleaned up. Every staff member in their

1 spare time, even while they were working, would get out
2 there and move the stuff around, clean it up, and hide
3 it. They couldn't get rid of it, so they had to hide it.

4 So, they'd put it in rooms and storerooms, lock
5 it up, and make the keys disappear so -- like, they
6 didn't have the keys to them or something. I'm not
7 really sure on the details.

8 MR. LeCHER: Do you think someone in one of our
9 offices could be tipping off?

10 MR. RAY: It's a definite possibility. I wouldn't
11 put it past them.

12 MR. LeCHER: I know that we do try and go up the
13 street so we don't appear like we're harrassing them.
14 So, it could have been that we started at one end of the
15 block and they observed us. Of course, day-to-day
16 inspections is something the Manager may want to know
17 more about than me.

18 Commissioners, we've been -- all right.

19 How many regular staff do you have?

20 MR. RAY: In all the buildings combined, which
21 includes the Fort Harrison, the Clearwater Bank Building,
22 the Quality Inn, the Heart of Clearwater Motel, and
23 Mimeo, which is just down the street from the Clearwater
24 Bank Building, there's about eight hundred to a thousand.

1 MR. CALDERBANK: Staffers?

2 MR. RAY: Staffers.

3 MR. LeCHER: But staff, primarily, lives in the
4 Fort Harrison?

5 MR. RAY: No.

6 MR. LeCHER: Is --

7 MR. RAY: It's divided up into thirds: the Fort
8 Harrison, the Heart of Clearwater Motel, and the Quality
9 Inn.

10 MR. LeCHER: Are -- oh, a third, a third, a third?

11 MR. RAY: Right.

12 MR. LeCHER: So, if you wanted -- does it cost
13 more to go to the Sandcastle than the Fort Harrison? I
14 mean, it's a newer building.

15 MR. RAY: I'm not really sure on price. I know that
16 the public --

17 MR. LeCHER: Are they all as overcrowded: the
18 Sandcastle, the --

19 MR. RAY: No. The Sandcastle is relatively empty,
20 okay, because they don't like having to stay at the
21 Sandcastle. They would -- the public, the guests, would
22 rather be at the Fort Harrison.

23 And there are some real serious conflicts that go
24 on about that.

1 MR. LeCHER: Why?

2 MR. RAY: Well, people will call in advance and
3 book reservations for a room, okay? Well, if somebody's
4 got more money than they do and decided they want that
5 room, the Accommodations Counselor will give them that
6 room. And so, when people finally do get here, their
7 reservations are no longer for the room that they asked
8 for. And there are some serious conflicts that occur
9 because of that.

10 And I would sit down and I would talk with these
11 people, these public people, okay? And I would just sit
12 down and listen to their problems. All I was was a couple
13 of ears, all right? Because nobody else would do that,
14 nobody, or not that I knew of, all right? And this way
15 I had a lot of information about what's happening with
16 the public, about how they were being treated. And there
17 were a lot of complaints.

18 And anytime they complained about something in
19 their room or something that had to do with their room,
20 it was instantly put on my shoulders and I had to handle
21 it, I had to deal with it.

22 MR. LeCHER: What kind of complaints did you have
23 and how did you handle them?

24 MR. RAY: Well, we had complaints like: "I didn't

1 get the room that I asked for?" "I asked for a refrigera-
2 tor; I don't have one." Just basic stuff like that.
3 They asked for something that they didn't get. Those
4 type of complaints.

5 So, what I would have to do is try to find some-
6 thing, either what they specifically asked for or some-
7 thing to substitute it in the best way I could.

8 MR. LeCHER: Commissioners, we could go on with
9 this young man for a long time, and we should take a
10 break. I'd like to take the break and invite him back
11 for questioning from the rest of the Commission.

12 So, Mr. Ray, we'd like you to stay around. We'd
13 like to ask you questions in about an hour and-a-half
14 at two p.m.

15 MR. RAY: Okay.

16 MR. LeCHER: Ladies and gentlemen, this meeting
17 is adjourned. We'll see you in an hour and-a-half.

18 (Whereupon, the luncheon recess was
19 taken.)

20
21 Afternoon Session

22 MR. LeCHER: Ladies and gentlemen, take your seats.
23 Commissioners, staff, consultants, take your seats.

24 We are returning to the business at hand. And for

1 those of you that are watching on television, welcome
2 back to the second half of our third day of hearings.
3 We will be going on, also, tomorrow morning and after-
4 noon and, hopefully, we'll end somewhere around five
5 o'clock tomorrow afternoon. Then, we'll give the
6 Scientologists their point of view to be expressed here,
7 as we have also presented the city's point of view.

8 Mr. Flynn, is your witness still sworn in?

9 MR. FLYNN: Yes, Mayor.

10 MR. LeCHER: All right. We are now listening to
11 a young man named Ray, David Ray.

12
13 DAVID RAY, Resumed.

14 MR. LeCHER: And Mr. Ray, you can continue to tell
15 what you want to tell, and try and be brief. I don't
16 want to stifle you, either. And then, I would like to
17 then throw it open to my colleagues for any questioning.
18 And I believe we'll start with Mr. Hatchett; is that
19 correct? All right.

20 So, Mr. Ray, would you continue your story, please.

21 MR. RAY: Yes.

22 I have two things I'd like to go over right away.
23 One is what they know in Scientology as the RPF's RPF.
24 And that's the Rehabilitation Project Force Rehabilitation

1 Project Force, okay?

2 If you do something wrong in the Church of Scien-
3 tology, you go into the RPF. If you do something wrong
4 in the RPF, you go to the RPF's RPF. And what they do
5 is they completely isolate you, okay? They completely
6 isolate you from anything. You cannot eat with anyone;
7 you cannot speak to anyone. You sleep in the garage
8 with all the rats, okay? And all you do is handle gar-
9 bage all day long.

10 MR. LeCHER: When you say "garage," do you mean
11 the parking garage?

12 MR. RAY: The parking garage, second floor.

13 MR. LeCHER: The second floor, all right.

14 Now, what about the wind and the rain and the ele-
15 ments? Do they have plywood up there or are you
16 sleeping on the ramps?

17 MR. RAY: No. They have plywood walls. There's
18 a bunch of furniture and stuff stored in there.

19 MR. LeCHER: That doesn't --

20 MRS. GARVEY: Were you in --

21 MR. LeCHER: I wonder if our building inspectors
22 had inspected that? It must be a code violation, I would
23 imagine. But that's another issue.

24 MR. RAY: All right.

1 Well, what they do in the RPF's RPF is just isolate
2 you from everything so that you're completely helpless.
3 It's like having him down on the ground and punching him
4 in the face over and over and over again. He's helpless,
5 okay?

6 They give you no positive whatsoever; it's negative.
7 "You're bad, you're terrible, and we're going to try to
8 help you. We're the only ones that can help you. If you
9 try to get help from the outside world, you'll die." And
10 that's what they tell you, okay?

11 And another thing that completely shocked me --
12 this is at the end when I left and I started on the routing
13 form to rout out. And I went over to the Treasury in
14 the International Training Organization - this is where
15 you get your training and you read all the materials and
16 stuff - and they handed me a piece of paper that says I
17 owe them six thousand dollars. Believe me. They call it
18 a freeloader's debt, okay, like I was freeloading on
19 them.

20 Here I am working this -- busting my tail for
21 them, working eighteen, twenty hours a day, all right,
22 taking only 9.60, then, twelve dollars a week, all right?
23 When I want to leave after all that, they tell me I still
24 owe them six thousand dollars, okay? I don't even --

1 MR. LeCHER: What did you tell them?

2 MR. RAY: I said, "Forget it." It's -- and I have
3 no intention of paying it. That's where they leave
4 themselves vulnerable. Since they are claiming to be a
5 religion and since they are claiming to be non-profit,
6 okay, I don't have to pay it.

7 MR. LeCHER: All right.

8 One quick question before I go to my colleagues:
9 Did you knowingly and willingly sign this million- or
10 billion-year contract?

11 MR. RAY: Yes, I did.

12 MR. LeCHER: Is it billion or million?

13 MR. RAY: Billion, or so --

14 MR. LeCHER: A billion-year contract.

15 You knowingly signed that?

16 MR. RAY: Yes, I did.

17 MR. LeCHER: All right.

18 Is there anything else you'd like to add?

19 MR. RAY: No. I'm ready for questions.

20 MR. LeCHER: I'd like to start with Mr. Hatchett,
21 Vice Mayor.

22 MR. HATCHETT: David, thank you.

23 Fraudulent promises -- but I want to get into
24 something else in the area of fraud.

1 I think you mentioned something about three hundred
2 people, maybe, a week checking in and out.

3 Give us a little more education on how those
4 activities took place with the public people coming
5 in.

6 MR. RAY: As far as money is concerned?

7 MR. HATCHETT: Correct.

8 MR. RAY: Okay.

9 Well, I had mentioned earlier there's about three
10 hundred people on the average there at any given time,
11 okay? They don't come in and out on a weekly basis.
12 Some of them stay there two or three months; some of them
13 live there, all right? That's their home. But the
14 average is - and this is being extremely conservative,
15 all right - a hundred dollars a week. That includes
16 your room, your meals, and your training or processing,
17 whichever you're going to do. All right.

18 So, they collect money -- one of the -- one of the
19 people that was in my room with me that shared my room --

20 MR. LeCHER: Excuse me.

21 Did you say a week or a day?

22 MR. RAY: A day; I'm sorry.

23 MR. LeCHER: You meant to say a day, but you did
24 say a week?

1 MR. RAY: Yes.

2 MR. LeCHER: All right.

3 MR. RAY: I'm sorry.

4 One of the guys that was in my room - his name was
5 Mark Fisher - he worked for the International Management
6 Organization, okay? And they managed all of the organi-
7 zations and missions throughout the world, and it's here
8 in Clearwater.

9 MRS. GARVEY: Is that what IMO is for?

10 MR. LeCHER: IMO?

11 MR. RAY: Yes.

12 MRS. GARVEY: International Management Organization.

13 MR. SHOEMAKER: That's an organization.

14 MR. LeCHER: That's -- it relates to a paper that
15 we showed as an exhibit earlier.

16 MR. RAY: Yes.

17 Well, he was in what they call an Evaler. And what
18 he does, he takes a look at org. statistics and he evalu-
19 ates them and tells them what they've got to do to
20 improve, where they're going wrong, okay, and so on to
21 make more money.

22 Well, they were published at the weekly meetings
23 that they would have. They would tell everybody how
24 much GI, gross income, was coming in from all over the

1 world. On the average that I'd hear is six or seven
2 hundred thousand dollars a week, okay? One week I
3 heard two million dollars.

4 MR. LeCHER: Million?

5 MR. RAY: Million in one week coming in.

6 And that goes into what they call Sea Org. Reserves,
7 which, as far as I know, can be a bank in Switzerland,
8 okay? It's there -- they claim Sea Org. Reserves is
9 there so if the country ever goes into a depression
10 that Scientology can survive.

11 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

12 Mr. Hatchett, do you have another question?

13 MR. HATCHETT: Yes.

14 About this Jonestown people incident: You say
15 somebody in the Guardian's Office gave you a report
16 against the federal government being that they were the
17 people that gassed them?

18 MR. RAY: Yes.

19 MR. HATCHETT: Do you know that person by name?

20 MR. RAY: No, I do not.

21 MR. HATCHETT: Was that person from Clearwater at
22 that time?

23 MR. RAY: Yes.

24 MR. HATCHETT: And was that said at a Clearwater

1 building?

2 MR. RAY: Yes, it was, at Fort Harrison.

3 MR. HATCHETT: On or about what date?

4 MR. RAY: Early June.

5 MR. HATCHETT: 1981?

6 MR. RAY: 1981.

7 MR. HATCHETT: Thank you.

8 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Shoemaker, do you have any ques-
9 tions?

10 MR. SHOEMAKER: Mr. Ray, how long were you a
11 Scientologist or were you actually a member of the
12 organization?

13 MR. RAY: I was a member of the Church for seven
14 months, and I was here in Clearwater for almost five.

15 MR. SHOEMAKER: What were the events leading up
16 to your leaving the Church? Was there any attempt made
17 to try to keep you from leaving?

18 MR. RAY: Yeah, there were attempts made to try
19 to keep me from leaving.

20 What made me leave more than anything was the
21 absolute --

22 MR. SHOEMAKER: Sorry.

23 MR. RAY: -- the absolute insanity that's there.
24 And they claim to be so sane, okay? And they teach you

1 how to be sane, so they claim. But what they're really
2 doing is they open you up to your personal self and they
3 program you to be L. Ron Hubbard's clone.

4 MR. SHOEMAKER: Well, from the time -- when did you
5 decide to leave? How long did it take from the time you
6 decided you were going to leave until the time you
7 actually left: a day or --

8 MR. RAY: Oh, no, six hours from the time I made
9 the ultimate decision. But I had been contemplating it
10 quite a bit for a couple of days before that. And all
11 together, I had been contemplating it after two days I
12 arrived there.

13 MR. SHOEMAKER: Well, when you decided that you
14 were going to leave, did you tell anybody that you were
15 going to leave at that point?

16 MR. RAY: Yeah.

17 I went up to what they call the Hubbard Communica-
18 tion Office, which they have one in each organization,
19 called Division 1. And I went up there and I said, "I'd
20 like to leave and I'd like to rout out," okay?

21 And what they do is they sit you down and put you
22 in Ethics and they said, "You've got to stay here and
23 write up every overt and withhold you have on the Church
24 of Scientology. We want to know about it, because this

1 way you won't leave here with bad feelings." That's
2 the con game they give you. They want you to tell every-
3 thing that you've got against them, okay, or everything
4 that you've done wrong ever in your life so that they
5 have it in writing, and they tell you that it's to make
6 you feel better. Sure, it makes you feel better until
7 they pull it out.

8 MR. SHOEMAKER: Did you do it?

9 MR. SHOEMAKER: Yeah, they make you put everything
10 in writing. You have to write it all down and sign it.

11 MR. SHOEMAKER: Did you do that?

12 MR. RAY: Yes.

13 MR. SHOEMAKER: You did?

14 MR. RAY: Yes.

15 MR. SHOEMAKER: And what was the next step after
16 that? How many -- how much -- what time period was
17 involved in this when they were routing you out, let's
18 say?

19 MR. RAY: This was -- this was like -- it took --
20 it took at least one day; it kind of dragged on to the
21 second day, because once I said, "Okay, I'm going to
22 leave" -- well, as soon as I said that, I just went back
23 to contemplation because I didn't know if I wanted to
24 go through with that because it's a lot of hassle. And

1 they treated me like a criminal, okay?

2 I could not say anything. I could not do anything.
3 I got dirty looks. I was -- got chewed out. I got
4 insults, okay? And they just sat me down at a desk and
5 just fired on me verbally.

6 MR. SHOEMAKER: What were -- what types of things
7 were they saying to you?

8 MR. RAY: I don't care to repeat them here, please.

9 MR. SHOEMAKER: Well, did they attack you personally
10 or -- that you shouldn't be leaving the Church or that --
11 those kinds of things, that the minute -- something was
12 going to happen to you --

13 MR. RAY: Right.

14 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- if you left or --

15 MR. RAY: Right.

16 When you first join, you have a history record,
17 okay, of everything you've ever done, all right, every
18 place you've ever been. And they pull that out and look
19 at it and go over it and start telling you how bad you
20 are, how, when you go out in that world, you're going
21 to die, okay, you're not going to make it; there's no
22 way. "All those people out there are suppressive. We're
23 the only sane ones around."

24 MR. SHOEMAKER: And they specifically told you

1 that --

2 MR. RAY: Oh, yeah --

3 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- that --

4 MR. RAY: -- over and over again.

5 MR. SHOEMAKER: Did they -- at the time they
6 pulled this information out from this initial document
7 you filled out, did you, before this time, have any
8 realization or indication that that was going to be
9 used in any way?

10 MR. RAY: No. I was told that that would be put in
11 the file and never brought up.

12 MR. SHOEMAKER: You were?

13 MR. RAY: Yes, I was.

14 MR. SHOEMAKER: And they specifically took that
15 form out and was reading right from that at the time --

16 MR. RAY: Yes, they did.

17 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- they were talking to you?

18 Do you know the name of the person who you were
19 talking to then?

20 MR. RAY: One's name is Doug Steele, and the other
21 one is Dee-Ann Steiger. I don't remember the other's
22 name.

23 MR. SHOEMAKER: So, after --

24 MR. RAY: There were three present.

1 MR. SHOEMAKER: So, after they were convinced and
2 going over all these things that were going to happen
3 to you, and they were convinced that you weren't going
4 to change your mind, what happened to you?

5 MR. RAY: They sped up the process a little, and
6 they took me over and I had this piece of paper that said
7 I owed a lot of money.

8 MR. SHOEMAKER: That's when you got that --

9 MR. RAY: Oh, that's -- that's when I got a little
10 angry at them.

11 MR. SHOEMAKER: Have they been in contact with you
12 since you left?

13 MR. RAY: No, they have not.

14 MR. SHOEMAKER: They have not.

15 You haven't received any information or --

16 MR. RAY: Well, something that I found out about
17 two weeks ago is that they have been sending mail with
18 my name on it, but they've been sending it to my mother.
19 They haven't been sending it to my home address. I
20 just found this out a couple of weeks ago.

21 MR. SHOEMAKER: Oh, really?

22 MR. RAY: Yes.

23 So, I took the mail, sent it back to them rejecting
24 it.

1 MR. SHOEMAKER: I -- I'm sure this is a difficult
2 question and, certainly, you don't have to answer it if
3 don't want - it's kind of personal but - since your
4 mother knew that you left the Church, have you lost
5 relationships with her to this point? I know you had
6 indicated you felt you would after today, but have you
7 been in communication with your mother since you left the
8 Church?

9 MR. RAY: Barely.

10 It's -- ever since I left the Church, she just
11 doesn't have any desire to talk to me or see me or any-
12 thing. I call her up on the phone once and a while; we
13 just don't get along on the phone. It's --

14 MR. SHOEMAKER: During the time that you were in
15 the Church, you would have been seventeen. Would that
16 have put you as a junior or a senior in high school?

17 MR. RAY: A senior.

18 MR. SHOEMAKER: During that time, did you go to
19 school at any time?

20 MR. RAY: No, I did not. Well, I took the Cali-
21 fornia High School Proficiency Examination before I ever
22 went into Scientology.

23 MR. SHOEMAKER: Oh, you did? I see.

24 MR. RAY: Yes.

1 MR. SHOEMAKER: Okay.

2 Have you heard of policies, while you were in
3 Scientology - I'm sure you have since you got out, but
4 while you were in Scientology - of Disassociate or the
5 Fair Game Policy?

6 MR. RAY: Yes. I've heard of the Fair Game
7 Policy.

8 MR. SHOEMAKER: Had you heard of it before you got
9 out of the Church?

10 MR. RAY: Yes.

11 MR. SHOEMAKER: And what did that mean to you?
12 What was the Fair Game Policy?

13 MR. RAY: Well, that meant that anybody who
14 committed what they considered a suppressive act toward
15 the Church of Scientology that they were just fair game
16 to anybody, you know, like a hunted deer or something.

17 MR. SHOEMAKER: Do you have any firsthand knowledge
18 of that being practiced against any individuals?

19 MR. RAY: No, I do not.

20 MR. SHOEMAKER: Are --

21 MR. RAY: One thing -- excuse me.

22 MR. SHOEMAKER: All right.

23 MR. RAY: One thing I'd like to say is that they
24 pound it into your head over and over again that if you

1 get any of the material for their Advanced Enlightenment
2 courses, okay, and read it before you've been properly
3 prepared for it that you will contract pneumonia at --
4 at least pneumonia and die.

5 MR. LeCHER: Did you get pneumonia?

6 MR. RAY: What's that?

7 MR. LeCHER: Did you get pneumonia?

8 MR. RAY: Not yet.

9 MR. LeCHER: That's a belief, all right. We can't
10 get into belief.

11 MR. SHOEMAKER: Also, would you go in just a little
12 bit -- there was some reference made in the outline which
13 we had about you having some experience in hotel manage-
14 ment before you came over here.

15 Could you explain what that was just briefly?

16 MR. RAY: Well, it's -- my grandparents own a hotel.

17 MR. SHOEMAKER: But you had actually worked in a
18 hotel before. You knew how a hotel operated before you --

19 MR. RAY: Well, I had been -- I had been staying
20 with them for a while. And when they took vacations and so
21 forth, I ran it. They -- they taught me how to do it,
22 and I picked up on things fairly quickly.

23 MR. SHOEMAKER: So, therefore, you would notice --
24 you would tend to notice much more in terms of the

1 conditions of rooms in the hotel, the fire exits, and
2 things that an average person --

3 MR. RAY: Oh, yes. I think I'm well qualified to
4 determine that.

5 MR. SHOEMAKER: There was a comment or there was
6 some reference made to vacation packages that were pro-
7 vided for some of the guests, rather than -- did everyone
8 who came here come for counseling only or were there
9 also vacations?

10 MR. RAY: Well, some people came here -- I remember
11 that some of the public would come in just for vacation
12 purposes, okay? But once they're there, that's it.
13 Those -- they'll talk them into taking services and spend-
14 ing more money.

15 So, they always ended up getting trained or getting
16 their processing, going up the bridge as they call it.

17 MR. SHOEMAKER: Going up the bridge?

18 MRS. GARVEY: Going up the --

19 MR. RAY: Right, going up the bridge.

20 MR. SHOEMAKER: Did you have any kind of firsthand
21 knowledge in terms of the operation of the Guardian's
22 Office, other than those that you had mentioned to us?

23 MR. RAY: No.

24 MR. SHOEMAKER: What was the purpose of the

1 Guardian's Office? What were you told the purpose of the
2 office was?

3 MR. RAY: To protect the Church of Scientology.

4 MR. SHOEMAKER: Mayor, I don't have any other
5 questions.

6 Thank you.

7 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Calderbank, do you have any ques-
8 tions?

9 MR. CALDERBANK: Yeah.

10 David, were you -- you say you were promised decent
11 living conditions when you came to California?

12 MR. RAY: Yes, I was.

13 MR. CALDERBANK: From California.

14 In modest means, were you ever given those accommo-
15 dations, what you would expect what they told you?

16 MR. RAY: The first day; that was it. The first
17 day, I guess they wanted -- they wanted me -- once they
18 had me in there, I guess they figured they could do any-
19 thing they wanted to me. So, the first day, they lived
20 up to their promises.

21 MR. CALDERBANK: And they -- you said that they
22 wouldn't give you medical care and you would have to pay
23 for it.

24 Did they make any promises as to medical care in

1 California to come to Clearwater?

2 MR. RAY: Yes. They told me I had full medical
3 and dental.

4 MR. CALDERBANK: Medical and dental?

5 MR. RAY: Yes.

6 MR. CALDERBANK: And when you tried to get that,
7 you were turned down?

8 MR. RAY: Yes, flatly refused.

9 MR. CALDERBANK: You made \$9.60 a week?

10 MR. RAY: Yes.

11 MR. CALDERBANK: And you were sixteen years old
12 when you first went in?

13 MR. RAY: Seventeen.

14 MR. CALDERBANK: Seventeen.

15 Did you have -- did you sign a W-2 form? That's
16 the tax form for your social security --

17 MR. RAY: I don't believe so, no.

18 MR. CALDERBANK: It's --

19 MR. RAY: Yeah, I know what it looks like.

20 MR. CALDERBANK: Okay.

21 Did you know -- were you working regular hours?

22 MR. RAY: At the Church of Scientology?

23 MR. CALDERBANK: Right.

24 MR. RAY: What do you consider regular hours?

1 Yeah, I worked regular hours.

2 MR. CALDERBANK: You had musters and you had to be
3 a certain place a certain time working for the Church?

4 MR. RAY: Yeah. I was required to be certain
5 places, but I had so much to do and so little time to do
6 it in; half the time I never made it.

7 MR. CALDERBANK: Did you ever have to set aside
8 breaks?

9 MR. RAY: Yeah. I was supposed to have lunch
10 break, breakfast break, dinner break.

11 MR. CALDERBANK: Did you ever get those?

12 MR. RAY: Once in a while I'd take them, but I'd
13 have to take them. That's how much work I had.

14 MR. CALDERBANK: Did children under sixteen in the
15 Cadet Org. follow just about the same basic routine of
16 labor and working conditions?

17 MR. RAY: I don't believe so, no.

18 MR. CALDERBANK: Okay.

19 The city inspectors that went up there, you said
20 they had moved furniture around and they were directed
21 to areas that had been cleaned up, and they had advanced
22 knowledge; is that correct?

23 MR. RAY: Okay. I didn't see the city inspectors
24 come in. I do remember helping them haul things away

1 and hide them, okay, because the city inspectors were
2 coming. And there was a lot of stuff to do and not
3 very many people to do it, and there you have it:
4 extremely hard work.

5 MR. CALDERBANK: Just for the public health and
6 safety: Would you consider, then, one inspection a
7 year -- or how often would a government agency have to
8 inspect to be able to ensure that it was in a cleaned
9 up condition all the time?

10 MR. RAY: Well --

11 MR. CALDERBANK: Because you were in a motel atmos-
12 phere prior.

13 MR. RAY: -- to put it mildly, if I was an inspector
14 and walked in there, I'd have condemned it.

15 MR. CALDERBANK: And you said that floors seven and eight
16 were an inferno. You said if a fire had started, they
17 would turn into an inferno. Why is that?

18 MR. RAY: Yeah, as an example, if it would have
19 started on floor seven because of the amount of boxes
20 and papers stacked in the rooms. And all the furniture
21 is wooden, and it's very old and very dry, okay? And
22 there is no sprinkler system, okay?

23 And the fire alarm system, as I said, you have to
24 go all the way downstairs to reception, okay. And that's

1 just to set off the alarm, not including the time it takes
2 to run across to get there and to get up to those floors.

3 MR. CALDERBANK: Did you ever see children in
4 poor health conditions?

5 MR. RAY: No, I did not.

6 MR. CALDERBANK: Did they ever physically restrain
7 you to prevent you from going outside when you wanted to?

8 MR. RAY: Yes.

9 MR. CALDERBANK: That was when they punched you?

10 MR. RAY: Yeah. I'm not blameless for that. I
11 turned around and punched him back and got out. But it
12 really shocked me. And then, I said, "Look, I'm
13 leaving. I've had it." And I'd walk out and turn around
14 and, all of a sudden, wham. I got it right in the face.

15 MR. CALDERBANK: All the time that -- do you know
16 who punched you in the face, who blocked you from leaving
17 physically?

18 MR. RAY: Richard Nordstrum.

19 MR. CALDERBANK: Richard Nordstrum.

20 You made it clear to him that you wanted to leave?

21 MR. RAY: Yes. I made it very clear to him that
22 I wanted a day off.

23 MR. CALDERBANK: And he physically stopped you?

24 MR. RAY: He physically tried. He chased me. I

1 ran. After I hit him, I ran. And I dove out the window
2 on the fourth floor onto the third floor roof, and jumped
3 off that into the parking lot and I ran down the parking
4 ramps and down the street.

5 MR. CALDERBANK: If you hadn't done that, do you feel
6 that you would have stayed there?

7 MR. RAY: No, I -- it's --

8 MR. CALDERBANK: You were talking about the food,
9 that you had to eat the leftovers.

10 Was sickness or food poisoning common there, to
11 your knowledge? Did many staffers get sick with the
12 food quality?

13 MR. RAY: Well, almost all the staffers looked like
14 they had health problems, okay? None specifically that
15 I know of because they're told not to talk about it,
16 okay? I was told not to talk about it.

17 I would get sick in my stomach once a day.

18 MR. CALDERBANK: And this was a result of eating
19 the food?

20 MR. RAY: That and the amount of work, lack of
21 sleep, lack of cleanliness.

22 MR. CALDERBANK: My last question is science and
23 technology. You mentioned that frequently. You only
24 mentioned services, scientifically proven facts, and

1 guarantees, legal documents, waivers, signatures.

2 Is that all you heard? Is that what you thought
3 of -- how was it represented to you?

4 MR. RAY: In Scientology, the only thing that was
5 represented to me that had anything to do with religion
6 was their marrying people, okay? And that's it.

7 And how it was -- how they can marry people is
8 beyond me. They -- the people in that Church get married
9 for one reason and one reason only, for love and affec-
10 tion, because they can't get it, all right? They pound
11 you and make you work so hard, and they chew you up and
12 spit you out again so many times, your desire for some-
13 body to love you and have a little affection for some-
14 body is so great that people just get married. Because
15 that's the way you have to do it in the Church of
16 Scientology. There are a lot of marriages.

17 My sister got married in the Sea Org. She's seven-
18 teen years old and she's pregnant.

19 MR. CALDERBANK: Would you sum -- in summation,
20 if you knew now -- if you knew then what you know now,
21 would you have joined Scientology? Would you have spent
22 money and given them work and, you know, the months of
23 your life to come to Clearwater?

24 MR. RAY: No.

1 MR. CALDERBANK: Do you think you were misrepre-
2 sented as to what you'd find here?

3 MR. RAY: Yes, very much so.

4 MR. CALDERBANK: No further questions.

5 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Berfield.

6 MR. BERFIELD: Mr. Ray, I think you covered most
7 of the issues that are living accommodations, medical
8 care, physical abuse, and city inspector.

9 And the problem that I have had before is the truth
10 of those witnesses that come in. But you said that you
11 never really - if I understand your testimony - that you
12 never really accepted Scientology from almost the second
13 day; is that correct?

14 MR. RAY: That's correct.

15 MR. BERFIELD: That being the case and you stayed
16 on for a relatively short time, what are you doing here
17 today? What do you have to benefit from coming here?

18 MR. RAY: A lot, okay?

19 That feeling that's inside of me to do some good
20 for a lot of people -- I know what happened in my family
21 because of Scientology. And I'm sure there are millions
22 of families with similar or worse problems because of
23 this organization, all right? And it breaks my heart.
24 It really breaks my heart to know that people out there

1 have to go through what I'm having to go through with my
2 family.

3 MR. BERFIELD: What -- along that line, I take it
4 that you do not personally fear for your own future,
5 but what about your family that remains in Scientology?

6 MR. RAY: I am almost completely lost on what to
7 do. I believe this is the right thing. This is a good
8 start; that's why I'm here.

9 MR. BERFIELD: But do you think there'll be retaliation
10 against them?

11 MR. RAY: Well, very possibly. That would be just
12 a guess, though; I don't know how accurate it would be.
13 But I would say, yes.

14 MR. BERFIELD: Mr. Calderbank hit on the point about
15 some of the things going on in the city.

16 And the question I would ask: If you could leave
17 one parting statement with the people in the City of
18 Clearwater, what would that be?

19 MR. RAY: Well, first of all, I would tell the City
20 of Clearwater that I am extremely proud of them in that
21 there are almost no local people involved in that group.
22 They have had the common sense and just to know that it's
23 a bad place and a bad scene and not to get involved in it,
24 all right, and they work together on it. And I just think

1 it's fantastic, and if anybody can do anything, you guys
2 can.

3 And one thing that I would watch out for is that,
4 since this testimony has been brought up, it's going to
5 be interesting to see what kind of attraction that gives
6 to the people. Because I know myself, being a teenager,
7 and when I was in high school and so forth, we all loved
8 to go down to haunted houses and stuff, okay, and see
9 what they're all about. Well, that may happen here.
10 They might want to go find out and see if all this bad
11 stuff is for real. And they could get trapped. And I
12 would be aware of that.

13 MR. BERFIELD: I have no further questions.

14 MR. LeCHER: Mrs. Garvey, do you have any questions?

15 MRS. GARVEY: Mr. Ray, I have a number of questions.
16 But first of all, I want to sympathize with you for the
17 chance you're taking and your family loss, that you
18 already suspect what's going to happen. And I appreciate
19 the fact you're willing to do that, even though -- if
20 you know you're going to break. I guess I pray that
21 you'll get support from everybody else, from so many
22 other people so that you'll have something to replace
23 that support. I think it's going to be important for
24 you.

1 To go back over some of the things you talked about:
2 For instance, when you talked about the inspection by
3 the city, how far in advance did they know that the city
4 was going to be there to inspect, because you're talking
5 about moving heavy objects and hiding things? That takes
6 more than two hours.

7 MR. RAY: About four days.

8 MRS. GARVEY: Four days? Okay.

9 You talked about Mr. Nordstrum and how you ran from
10 him after the physical fight and jumped out to the third
11 floor and ran. You returned?

12 MR. RAY: Yes, I did.

13 MRS. GARVEY: Why did you return?

14 MR. RAY: Well, again, it's that part of me that
15 says, "Okay, David, you want to do some good for some
16 people. So, this appears to be a good way to do it, so
17 you're going to have to do it their way."

18 MRS. GARVEY: So, you must have gotten an awful
19 lot of plus to get you to be so firmly committed in such
20 a short time, in spite of the behavior towards you, the
21 way they treated you. You still had this sense of
22 commitment: they are going to accomplish something that
23 you can help with?

24 MR. RAY: Right.

1 What attracted me originally was that I was a very
2 isolated person, okay, when I lived in San Diego. I
3 didn't have a whole lot of friends, all right? I wasn't
4 real happy with myself and the things that I was doing,
5 all right?

6 Well, my mother was in Scientology and one day took
7 me down to meet what they call an FSM, a field staff
8 member, in San Diego. His name is Ray Barton; he's a
9 Class 8 auditor, okay? The highest you can go is to
10 Class 12, and he's a Class 8. And I met him, and she
11 had told him a little bit about my background. Well,
12 all he did was make me feel like I was on top of the
13 world and give me all the friendship that I had ever
14 wanted, okay?

15 MRS. GARVEY: Big brother --

16 MR. RAY: Right.

17 MRS. GARVEY: -- someone that could really relate
18 to you?

19 MR. RAY: Right.

20 And he was just -- he would put me up for everything
21 that I did. He would find the good points in it, all
22 right, and put me up. And that's what attracted me to
23 it. I said, "Well, anything like this has got to be
24 good." And I was wrong.

1 MRS. GARVEY: When you first heard about this and
2 heard about auditing -- I realize that you never took
3 auditing sessions?

4 MR. RAY: No, I did not.

5 MRS. GARVEY: Okay.

6 But when you heard about auditing, were you ever
7 told that what you said would be confidential?

8 MR. RAY: Oh, yes, that's -- yeah, many, many times.

9 MRS. GARVEY: Were you told that it was a scientific
10 technique, that auditing is scientifically based and not
11 religious -- or it's scientifically based or not?

12 MR. RAY: I was told that all of the written tech-
13 nology, okay, that includes what's in the books, okay,
14 and what they do with you in an auditing session, was
15 researched, scientifically researched, and scientifically
16 proven to work.

17 MRS. GARVEY: You talked about your job in - I
18 keep forgetting these initials - the RPF, which was the
19 garbage collections in the restaurants --

20 MR. RAY: Yes.

21 MRS. GARVEY: -- right, and your subsequent stomp-
22 ing down like they do the grapes.

23 Can you -- can you describe the conditions in the
24 restaurant? Were the conditions -- or were the restaurant

1 conditions -- kitchen, rather, clean, that they would
2 pass any kind of health standards, as far as you're
3 concerned? Or were you not allowed that far in?

4 MR. RAY: I saw just about everything, because,
5 also, in the RPF, one of the things we had to do was
6 get in there and scrub the toilets.

7 Now, I don't -- I don't appreciate scrubbing a
8 toilet without having rubber gloves or something, okay?
9 And no, they were not clean, okay? They -- we did that,
10 like, once a day when it needs to be done a lot, a lot
11 more often than that.

12 Like I said, if I was any kind of inspector that
13 went in there, I'd condemn the building and I'd close it
14 down.

15 MRS. GARVEY: Specifically, in the restaurant
16 kitchens, would you -- were you able to -- were you
17 allowed in there, and could you say whether or not
18 they were, basically, sanitary, clean? They're cooking
19 food there for the public; is that --

20 MR. RAY: No, they're not sanitary.

21 One of the guys I bunked with - his name was Larry
22 Black - he was the chief cook. And he was always coming
23 and complaining how they didn't clean up everything for
24 him in the morning, so he's not going to clean it up for

1 them in the evening. And so, they'll get served break-
2 fast with dirty dishes.

3 MRS. GARVEY: Okay.

4 You did make comment that you really weren't aware
5 of any children -- negative conditions.

6 Are you aware of a location of a school? Where
7 would children go to school in this area?

8 MR. RAY: Okay.

9 The Scientology -- I don't know about this area.
10 But the Scientology organization has a -- like, a chain
11 of schools; they're called Apple Schools.

12 MRS. GARVEY: Apple?

13 MR. RAY: Apple.

14 MRS. GARVEY: Apple Schools.

15 MR. RAY: Yes.

16 MR. LeCHER: Is that from the Beatles?

17 MRS. GARVEY: Would there be any school facility
18 within the Clearwater area that you know of?

19 MR. RAY: Not that I know of, not in the Clearwater
20 area, no.

21 MRS. GARVEY: So, therefore, obviously -- well,
22 not that you know of. But if there is no place for a
23 school, they can't have a school.

24 Do you have any knowledge of solicitation practices?

1 How do they get you and me to join?

2 MR. RAY: Well, they have -- when I was in San
3 Diego, the first day I was on staff, they took me down
4 to downtown where they have a little office. It says,
5 "Dianetics: The Modern Science of Mental Health," okay,
6 which is the book, Dianetics. And they have big posters
7 that they have out on the front sidewalk on one of the
8 downtown streets, and they would stand out there and just
9 start walking with a few people on down the street, just
10 talking to them. And most people weren't interested, but
11 they'd bring a few people in and they'd get them started

12 MRS. GARVEY: How did they bring -- do you have any
13 idea how they brought those in that were brought in? What
14 did they say to convince them?

15 If you have no idea, don't -- I mean, don't go on.
16 But I was just wondering if you did.

17 You obviously used a solicitation method with your
18 phone calling?

19 MR. RAY: Right.

20 MRS. GARVEY: What did you do to sell those people
21 that you got?

22 MR. RAY: All I did was call all my friends and
23 say, "This is great. This'll help you out a lot." They
24 trusted me; they believed me.

1 MRS. GARVEY: You didn't give any specific promises
2 that --

3 MR. RAY: Didn't have to.

4 MRS. GARVEY: They took your word?

5 MR. RAY: They took my word for it.

6 MRS. GARVEY: I have no questions.

7 MR. LeCHER: A few quick ones, then, we'll go to
8 the next witness.

9 For clarification: Are public people paying people?

10 MR. RAY: Yes.

11 MR. LeCHER: The public are the paying people?

12 MR. RAY: Yes.

13 MR. LeCHER: When they would arrive there, what
14 would -- where would they eat, were they charged, and
15 would they get -- was the food included in their room?

16 MR. RAY: Their food was not included in their
17 room.

18 There are two restaurants in the Fort Harrison.
19 One is called the Hourglass, which is a nice dinner
20 restaurant; they have entertainment. And there's another
21 one called The Lemon Tree, and it's a cafeteria-style
22 restaurant. And they would eat in either one.

23 They would have a menu with the prices listed,
24 and above it it would be listed as donations, okay?

1 MR. LeCHER: Donations?

2 MR. RAY: Yeah. But if you weren't willing to pay
3 that price they were asking for it, you weren't going to
4 get any food, period.

5 MR. LeCHER: Did they charge the going price, like,
6 a steak may be 8.95 in a restaurant or --

7 MR. RAY: Actually, their prices are a little bit
8 more expensive.

9 MR. CALDERBANK: Even with that overhead?

10 MR. LeCHER: Even with that overhead, right.

11 What would they charge for these rooms for these
12 paying people? Did you say a hundred dollars a day?

13 MR. RAY: No, that's -- that doesn't -- that's not
14 just for the room. That includes everything, okay, a
15 public person would pay for there. All right. The rooms
16 would run anywhere from -- for eighty a day up to a
17 hundred a day.

18 MR. LeCHER: But would you get a private room for
19 that?

20 MR. RAY: Oh, yes. They did have rooms that were
21 shared by public people. They would have a shared room --

22 MR. LeCHER: Like husband and wife in a double --

23 MR. RAY: Well, like, two men, you know, or two
24 women would share a room. They probably don't even know

1 each other, but they'd share a room.

2 MR. LeCHER: All right.

3 How many public guests or paying guests would you
4 have there on an average week for pay?

5 MR. RAY: Around three hundred on the average all
6 the time.

7 MR. LeCHER: All right.

8 You mentioned earlier about a young person named
9 Nancy Meader --

10 MR. RAY: Nadine.

11 MR. LeCHER: -- Nadine Meader.

12 Explain how she was held there or kept there, the
13 thirteen year old child.

14 MR. RAY: Well, by what was said to her from people
15 in the Sea Org., okay, she kept herself there. That's --
16 that's what really --

17 MR. LeCHER: That sounds odd, but --

18 MR. RAY: Yeah, but --

19 MRS. GARVEY: That's what he's saying, psychologi-
20 cally, you --

21 MR. RAY: Yeah. You -- they -- they get you
22 psychologically, okay, so that everything you do you're
23 being held by yourself -- you're holding yourself there,
24 okay? They don't have to do anything. All they've got

1 to do is sit there and plant things into your head, okay,
2 and you'll do it on your own.

3 MR. LeCHER: Well, I can see how parents could
4 put somebody there. But I don't know how parents could
5 allow them to stay there if they want them back. That,
6 to me, is hard to figure out.

7 MR. RAY: Well, I can't testify to that.

8 MR. LeCHER: You mentioned everything was absolute
9 insanity.

10 What do you mean by "absolute insanity"?

11 MR. RAY: The people walk around there like robots
12 They're robots that are programmed. I mean, they might
13 as well be a machine, not a human. They might -- they
14 are not individuals, okay? Everybody is the same.

15 They study the same material, okay? They speak
16 in the same terminology. They use the same slang words,
17 the same this, the same that: everything is the same,
18 okay? There's no room for being individual. And they
19 don't build -- they build you up at first to get you in,
20 but once they get you in, they do exactly the opposite
21 and they fire on you, okay, to lower your defenses.
22 Once you've got your defenses lowered, you know, they've
23 got you.

24 MR. LeCHER: One more thing. I -- you mentioned

1 these deplorable conditions and we can, of course, send
2 inspectors over there tomorrow, and I would assume they'd
3 be cleaned up or moved around and, then, I'm not sure
4 of what that would prove. And it also may be harrass-
5 ment, too.

6 But I wonder about people living in a garage. I
7 don't know how they could clean up a garage in twenty-
8 four hours. I'm just suggesting that.

9 Was it suggested to you that you join the Army and
10 go the Special Forces so that you'd be better able to
11 infiltrate U.S. intelligence agencies?

12 MR. RAY: It wasn't worded like that.

13 When I was first -- I didn't want to bring this
14 up, okay, but I will bring it up now since you already
15 did.

16 When I was first recruited into the Sea Org.,
17 they -- I said, "Well, what kind of things, you know,
18 do you do? I mean, what are you doing to get Scientology
19 into this area and this area?" And they said, "Well,
20 you know, if you were interested in putting Scientology
21 into the government, we'll maybe put you in the Army in
22 the Special Forces and get you into the CIA or something
23 to put Scientology in there."

24 It was way up in the air, okay? They didn't -- it

1 wasn't a direct "Yes, you're going to do that," okay? It
2 was just a suggestion. I could have -- if I would have
3 reached for it and grabbed it, okay, then, I would have
4 had something. But otherwise, it's -- I think that piece
5 of information is worthless.

6 MR. LeCHER: Thank you.

7 That's it, then, for this witness, unless there's
8 something that you, Commissioners, want to ask at this
9 particular time. There isn't.

10 I want to thank you very much for coming to see
11 us today, David.

12 MRS. GARVEY: Good luck.

13 MR. LeCHER: And good luck to you. You've been
14 very cooperative, and you're a very bright young man.
15 And we wish you well.

16 MR. RAY: Thank you very much.

17 MR. LeCHER: I hope you get your family back.

18 MR. RAY: Yeah, I hope so, too.

19 MR. LeCHER: Thank you.

20 Our next person -- we have a couple named Adell
21 and Ernest Hartwell.

22 MR. HARTWELL: Mrs. Hartwell's not here yet. She
23 went back to change clothes.

24 MR. LeCHER: Why don't -- will you come up, Mr.

1 Hartwell?

2 Mr. Hartwell, you'll be sworn in, first.

3 Madam Clerk, Miss Goudeau.

4
5 ERNEST HARTWELL, a witness herein,
6 having first been duly sworn by a Clerk for the City of
7 Clearwater, was examined and testified as follows:

8 MR. FLYNN: Before Mr. Hartwell begins, I'd just
9 like to put a few documents into evidence.

10 MR. LeCHER: I'd like to ask Mr. Hartwell the few
11 basic questions that we're asking every witness.

12 Mr. Hartwell, you are Mr. Hartwell, sir, are you --

13 MR. HARTWELL: Yes.

14 MR. LeCHER: All right.

15 Are you appearing here today and testifying under
16 oath voluntarily?

17 MR. HARTWELL: Yes.

18 MR. LeCHER: Have you been paid by anyone for your
19 testimony, other than expenses for coming to Clearwater?

20 MR. HARTWELL: No.

21 MR. LeCHER: Do you have a lawsuit against the
22 Church of Scientology?

23 MR. HARTWELL: Yes.

24 MR. LeCHER: Does the Church of Scientology have

1 a lawsuit against you?

2 MR. HARTWELL: Yes.

3 MR. LeCHER: Yes to both questions.

4 Has anyone suggested to you that you should state
5 anything but the truth or has anyone suggested that you
6 change your testimony for any reason?

7 MR. HARTWELL: No.

8 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Flynn.

9 MR. FLYNN: Exhibit 34 --

10 THE CLERK: It's 36.

11 MR. FLYNN: -- oh, 36, is a policy letter from the
12 Church of Scientology from the Executive Series, entitled
13 "Governing Policy." Could we put that on the overhead
14 projector, please?

15 (A copy of a policy letter, entitled
16 "Governing Policy," was marked as
Exhibit No. 36, as of this date.)

17 MR. LeCHER: How many do you have?

18 MR. FLYNN: I'm going to put two on the projector
19 and introduce four.

20 As you can see, this policy states at the top,
21 "Governing Policy. The governing policy of finance is
22 to a, make money." Then, going down to j, k, and l, it
23 says, "make money, make more money, make other people
24 produce so as to make money." It's copyrighted L. Ron

1 Hubbard. The copyright is in the lower lefthand column
2 below --

3 MR. HATCHETT: Would you please raise that for me?

4 MR. FLYNN: Further down, right at the bottom.

5 And Exhibit 37 is a document, entitled "List of
6 Services, Church of Scientology of California, The Flag
7 Land Base."

8 This particular document appears in a -- as a
9 brochure, and it's distributed in their organizations
10 throughout the world. And as you can see, some of the
11 courses are rather expensive.

12 MRS. GARVEY: What's that one thing? Leadership --
13 is it OEC?

14 MR. FLYNN: For instance, the first course up in
15 the upper lefthand corner under "Flag Spiritual Counsel-
16 ing Service," there appears "L10, L11, L12, twenty-five
17 hours, \$10,638.89." And the courses, as you go down, are
18 generally in the -- seven thousand, three thousand, thir-
19 teen thousand, twelve thousand, eight thousand, as you
20 can see.

21 MR. CALDERBANK: How much does it cost to complete
22 the NOTS auditing, the NOTS program? Is that a twenty-
23 five thousand dollar program?

24 MR. FLYNN: I'm not really sure. It changes at

1 various times. The person to ask would be Ed Walters.
2 But I've heard various figures of ranging into the forty
3 and fifty thousand dollar range.

4 In the middle of the document, it appears there
5 is a notation, "Package Prices. Elementary Evaluator
6 Course, \$10,638.84; OEC" - I believe that stands for
7 Senior OEC and Internship - "\$22,341.00." And then,
8 "OEC SNR OEC FEBC," which the witness mentioned, which is Flag
9 Executive Briefing Course, is "\$37,945.38." And there
10 is another --

11 MR. LeCHER: Do they get --

12 MR. FLYNN: -- course there for forty-two thousand
13 dollars.

14 MR. LeCHER: Where do they get these odd amounts?
15 Is that tax?

16 MRS. GARVEY: What is OEC? What is the OEC, the
17 one there for a million dollars?

18 MR. FLYNN: I believe that's an Organization
19 Executive Course.

20 MR. BERFIELD: Mr. Flynn, on these documents,
21 unless we assume -- unless you tell us to the contrary,
22 these are all available to us from some source, valid source,
23 that we can look at; is that correct?

24 MR. FLYNN: That is precisely correct.

1 This particular document, you can walk across the
2 street and pick it up.

3 MR. BERFIELD: Oh. But I meant the ones that you
4 introduced previously, they're just -- they're copies.

5 MR. FLYNN: This particular document, the Governing
6 Policy document, comes right out of a series of books
7 which, now that you brought it up, we will bring in and
8 put in front of you all the books. And I believe the
9 cost of the whole set is in the range of two or three
10 thousand dollars for a ten- or twelve-volume green set,
11 in which this policy appears right in that set under
12 "Finances."

13 MRS. GARVEY: How many times do people use their
14 credit cards for a donation?

15 MR. FLYNN: I don't know; I really don't know.

16 MR. LeCHER: Is that -- I can't see that far. Does
17 that say 1,773,000 --

18 MRS. GARVEY: There's a few extra numbers there.

19 MR. HATCHETT: That's OEC?

20 MR. LeCHER: -- or it's a billion?

21 MR. HATCHETT: Yeah, OEC.

22 MR. LeCHER: The OEC. The fifteen cents -- or is
23 that a page?

24 MR. CALDERBANK: That's a dash.

1 MRS. GARVEY: That's a dash.

2 MR. FLYNN: I think it's -- I think Mr. Walters
3 is probably the one who could answer that. It appears
4 like it's \$1,063.00 and eighty or ninety cents.

5 MR. LeCHER: OEC under Flag Administration Courses,
6 then, OEC --

7 MRS. GARVEY: There's a range, maybe, from eleven
8 thousand to ten-seventeen?

9 MR. CALDERBANK: Yeah, that's what I said.

10 MR. FLYNN: Which one are you talking about?

11 MR. LeCHER: Flag Ship Administration, the third
12 one down, OEC.

13 MR. WALTERS: Yeah, that would be seventeen.

14 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

15 MR. WALTERS: Yeah, that's the range. It's not
16 one million dollars; there's no course one million
17 dollars.

18 MRS. GARVEY: Oh, good.

19 MR. FLYNN: As you will note at the bottom:
20 "Attention credit card users, you may use your Visa or
21 MasterCharge Card."

22 MR. SHOEMAKER: Mr. Flynn, are you going to point
23 out the fact about the hotels and so forth, and the
24 suggestions that "The above room donations are for single

1 or double occupancy," and also the restaurants, I
2 believe, are referred to. "The suggested donation per
3 room for dining is \$80.00."

4 MR. FLYNN: Yeah. As Mr. Shoemaker has just done,
5 he's pointed that out. And the costs appear to be regu-
6 lated or fixed right next to the notation to the type of
7 room that's being received. And as the witness just
8 testified and, as I believe, Mr. Kelley testified, those
9 are flat fees that are paid.

10 Okay.

11 And we will simply have marked - which we won't
12 go into now - two more exhibits: one, entitled "Accommo-
13 dations," describing the Fort Harrison Hotel, and another
14 one describing donations, as the next two exhibits.

15 (A copy of a document, entitled
16 "List of Services," was marked as
Exhibit No. 37, as of this date;

17 A copy of a document, entitled
18 "Accommodations," was marked as
Exhibit No. 38, as of this date;

19 A copy of a document describing
20 donations was marked as Exhibit No.
39, as of this date.)

21 MR. LeCHER: Now, you're name is Mr. Hartwell.

22 Is your wife with you, yet?

23 Do you want to wait for Mrs. Hartwell, or can we --

24 MR. FLYNN: No.

1 MR. LeCHER: Mrs. Hartwell -- when the officer
2 comes, would you just lead her down front to join her
3 husband.

4 All right. Would you like us to just -- would you
5 like to tell us in your own words or would you like us
6 to lead you through it for your testimony?

7 MR. HARTWELL: I guess, I'll go through part of it
8 in my own words.

9 MR. LeCHER: Why don't you do that, sir. Go ahead.

10 MR. HARTWELL: Well, I've lived in Las Vegas for
11 a number of years, and I met my wife some fifteen years
12 ago and we got married. We got married. And one of our
13 activities -- our side activity is dancing. We both
14 enjoy dancing very much and became pretty accomplished
15 at it. And one of the choreographers for the show in
16 Las Vegas wanted to choreograph a comedy dance routine,
17 which is like ballroom dancing, and she chose us to
18 teach.

19 So, we thought of a good comedy routine, and about
20 the time we finished it, we'd be just waiting to go to
21 work. She had suggested that we go to Scientology - she
22 was a Scientologist - and take a Comm course and take,
23 also, the course she was teaching in How to Project
24 Yourself to the Public. We did do that, and we thought

1 it would be an awfully good thing. I had never had any-
2 thing to do with Scientology up until that point. So,
3 I followed her suggestion, and I went in and took the
4 Comm course.

5 My memory's not the best, but if I remember right,
6 I think that was in 1979.

7 MR. LeCHER: Good.

8 MR. HARTWELL: So, just about the time that I had
9 finished the Comm course - again, I don't know, it might
10 have been ten days or something along that line - I was
11 approached by representatives from the L. Ron Hubbard
12 Personal Vocation. They didn't represent themselves at
13 that time that way. But anyway, they put to us a propo-
14 sition of us going into the Church of Scientology and
15 following our dancing career. Of course, that was the
16 one thing that appealed to us pretty strongly because
17 we -- but of all the other things that it offered, too.
18 It seemed like I got -- or I finally thought, "Well, it's
19 a pretty good program."

20 Now, my wife, of course, became more of in favor of
21 it much sooner than I did, because I was pretty skeptical
22 about a lot of it. But to start off with, her two
23 daughters were in Scientology. The oldest daughter had
24 been in it for a number of years and my stepson, or her

1 daughter's husband, had been in it for a number of years,
2 and he often talked to us about things about Scientology:
3 the things that they were doing, what they were
4 accomplishing, and some of the great things that they were
5 doing. I always had kind of a "Well, let's wait and see"
6 attitude about it. And I never did see any of the
7 results.

8 But anyway, I started checking up on it when they
9 presented this program to us. Oh, I almost forgot. The
10 younger daughter, Fre-Dawn, she was about nine years old
11 when we married. So, I took -- helped raise her, too,
12 actually as if she was my own child.

13 MRS. GARVEY: We know it's tough.

14 MR. HARTWELL: I'm sorry; I thought I was over
15 that.

16 MR. HATCHETT: We can wait.

17 MRS. GARVEY: Some things you never get over.

18 MR. HARTWELL: Anyway, they had -- I'll explain
19 this, too. She was in junior high school, she was a
20 brilliant child; she was on the honor roll and she did
21 very well in that type of thing there. But when she got
22 into high school, for some reason - in that period of
23 just a few months' time between junior high school and
24 high school - she went wrong, and we never could quite

1 figure out what happened. But she didn't like high
2 school. She couldn't seem to get adjusted to high
3 school. She started ditching and doing various things
4 like this.

5 So, the other daughter was in Scientology and talked
6 her Mom into sending her over to Scientology and see if
7 they couldn't do something about her education. They
8 had a much superior system, program, and all this sort
9 of thing. So, they sold her on the idea of going in
10 and leaving school all together. So, this was necessary
11 for -- I mean, I became pretty concerned about that. I
12 wanted to know what kind of a program they had. I went
13 down there to try to find out what they were teaching
14 her. And they were just telling her, you know -- telling
15 me they don't want to be concerned -- this isn't my
16 concern, this is her Mom's concern. And I got, you
17 know, a lot of baloney from them. So, I tried to talk
18 to Adell about it, but I never could get anywhere with
19 her, either. Well, between her and her daughter, they
20 both accepted the Scientology program, signed her in,
21 and sent her off. Just like that, she was gone.

22 So, I didn't have anything to do with -- I just
23 thought things weren't right. And I couldn't get a hold
24 of anything that led me to believe that it was right.

1 So, in the meantime, I'll come back to where they
2 presented us with the program of serving under L. Ron
3 Hubbard. And some of the things that they presented to
4 us: One was, of course, our living conditions, where we
5 would live and where we were going. And they had told
6 us that we were going to Clearwater, Florida. And we
7 were shown pictures of the hotel here of our own room -
8 we would have a private room - and the grounds, and we
9 would have access to all the facilities that were there.
10 And being right on the ocean, that kind of appealed to me
11 as one thing.

12 Well, before I even made a decision on that, I went
13 to the library and checked, you know, as much as I could
14 on the area here, the weather conditions, and so on and
15 so forth. And I went -- I said, "Well." Then, of course,
16 what they promised us was a five-hour working day, they
17 promised to let us follow our dancing career. Heck, I
18 thought we were another Ginger Rogers and Fred Astaire
19 team -- produce, in other words, our comedy routine, our
20 dancing routine, and movie work. So, this, of course,
21 appealed to us, something we were very much interested in.
22 And I was already scheduled and was supposed to become an
23 editor and/or a photographer. So, again, this appealed
24 to me, too.

1 But -- quite a number of things. And one of the
2 things that I did was I went to visit a fellow who had
3 been aboard ship. I went and talked to Mary's daughter
4 who had been here to Clearwater and had been at the
5 hotel and stayed there. And they had nothing but good
6 things to say about it, nothing but good things to say
7 about it.

8 So, over a two- to three-week period, I checked
9 out everything that they had to offer. I checked every-
10 body I could, everywhere I could, and I got nothing but
11 good reports. And I said, "Hey, it looks all right," and
12 accepted. But under the conditions I accepted, number
13 one, transportation. I had two automobiles at the time
14 and didn't need them and they didn't want anybody to
15 take them with them. We couldn't do that, but they
16 had all kinds of transportation here. We would have
17 transportation wherever we needed it at the hotel. They
18 had cars and we could use any one of them. So, this was
19 agreeable.

20 The living quarters, I told you what was promised
21 to us. Well, I finally agreed to go ahead with it. And
22 the arrangements that we were to get ourselves to Los
23 Angeles, and they would reimburse for our expenses of
24 getting there and, then, they would put us on a plane and

1 fly us to Clearwater, Florida. So, of course, we were
2 all excited about the whole thing because at the time
3 it seemed real good. They gave us the address of the
4 Fort Harrison, the Clearwater Hotel. I mean, the --

5 MR. LeCHER: The Sandcastle?

6 MR. HARTWELL: 210 Harrison?

7 MRS. GARVEY: That's Fort Harrison.

8 MR. LeCHER: The Fort Harrison, okay.

9 MR. HARTWELL: The address they gave us where we
10 would be. Then, they gave us the local phone number here
11 to give to other members of our family, address and phone
12 number of where we were going to be in case they wanted
13 to get in touch in case an emergency came up and so forth.
14 So, we were fairly convinced that this is where we were
15 coming to.

16 Now, when we got to Los Angeles, they took our
17 belongings into the headquarters there in Los Angeles
18 and sent us to a motel. The next morning, a car came
19 over to pick us up and take us, supposedly, to the air-
20 port. So, we left the motel we was at under very hush,
21 hush conditions, you couldn't talk. And he left and
22 drove around down on Main Street and off on side streets,
23 checking the car to make sure it wasn't bugged, checking
24 around to make sure he wasn't followed. If this went on,

1 I thought, really, they were beginning to have questions
2 about us. And he explained to us that he had to take
3 precautions because they didn't want anybody to know
4 where L. Ron Hubbard was; they didn't want anybody
5 following them or that sort of thing.

6 So, they finally ended up in Glendale, a town that
7 I had lived in, and ended up on the top floor of a public
8 parking lot. And then, he pulled up alongside of another
9 car and there we were to be transferred to the other car,
10 our goods. We took with us the things we had with us;
11 they transferred to the other car, and the other car
12 took off. And still, we thought we were going to the
13 airport.

14 Well, they leave town, and the way he's going, I
15 finally says, "Hey, I'm very familiar with this area.
16 What's going on? You're not going to the airport. Where
17 are we going?" And then, he said, "Well, we're sorry.
18 We just couldn't tell you exactly where you were going.
19 We had to tell you were going to Florida. But you're not
20 going to Florida, you're going to southern California."
21 Well, I mean, the shock for both of us. I just -- I
22 ended up speechless; I didn't even know what to say or
23 think for a while. I was totally spellbound.

24 But we finally agreed to go on down there and at

1 least look into things. One of the things -- one of the
2 big sales points, of course, was that they had assured
3 us that we would be reunited with our daughter, Fre-Dawn,
4 that, of course, she was going to the same area.

5 And I guess I ought to go ahead and mention, too,
6 that L. Ron Hubbard was producing these movies as pro-
7 motional things for the Church and for -- also, to get
8 down all his theories and philosophy and everything on
9 movie. And it took forever to do that, and this type of
10 story they would give us.

11 So, we finally figured, "Well, the only thing we
12 could do is go on down and see what the conditions were
13 and pick it up from there." That was the first real
14 shock and disappointment we had, the first one.

15 But now, we get down to the location. It was a few
16 miles out of Palm Springs in the middle of the desert,
17 the last place I would go to if I had a choice and know
18 where I'm going to. I knew the area, had been there
19 before several times, and it was just like Las Vegas.
20 Hey, I wanted to get the heck out of this desert, and I
21 wanted to go to Clearwater, Florida.

22 But anyway, we got down there. The next job was
23 seeing the deteriorated and dilapidated condition of
24 the organization. I mean, we were at the point where I

1 expected to go down there and find, you know, gentlemen
2 like yourselves dressed in suits and ties and, you know,
3 clean and adequate buildings that you have here. I was
4 absolutely shocked to see everybody running around in
5 shorts, ragged clothes, dirty, and unkempt. And I just --
6 I couldn't believe my eyes what I was seeing.

7 And of course, the ranch they took us to was in
8 the same condition. There were weeds falling all over,
9 the lawns had all died, the housing, the buildings needed
10 painting. Everything was in a dilapidated and run down
11 condition, neglected condition more than anything. So,
12 that's shock number two.

13 Then -- let's see, how do I explain this? Well,
14 they had three ranches down there. They took us to
15 work on the main ranch. On the main ranch was their
16 main activity, fifty, sixty acres, something like that.
17 And we met our daughter there. They brought her out.
18 And then, we were told that where we were living was on
19 the other end. We didn't get to see it until late that
20 night. So, we spent the afternoon there.

21 Now, another thing that was very disturbing to
22 us, too, was that all of our personal belongings were
23 left in Los Angeles. I think we had a suitcase or two
24 that we took with us and our overnight bag and a few

1 things like that. Otherwise, when we went to this place,
2 most of our things were still in Los Angeles. And so,
3 we just sat around the ranch that day, saw this place
4 and that place and what was happening.

5 That night, about eleven o'clock, we were taken
6 over to what was supposed to be our living quarters.
7 And boy, you talk about shock number -- whatever number
8 it was. I -- we just couldn't believe it. They put us
9 into a little shack that apparently had been -- I don't
10 know, it was just a little, three-room shack on the edge
11 of the ranch there. The driver took us up to the door
12 and said, "That's where you'll be," backed off, and left
13 us. We go inside and what a mess; we couldn't believe
14 it.

15 And of course, the most -- the worst thing about
16 it is that the place was just totally overrun with bugs,
17 insects, and all kinds of desert whatever you call them.
18 They give us a set of sheets and told us that there was
19 another room -- another couple that had been in the room
20 at the other end, and they had just taken the sheets and
21 put them in one of the other rooms. And this wasn't
22 big enough.

23 The facilities consisted of a mattress on the floor.
24 So, when somebody turned the lights on, of course, it

1 stirred up the bugs and everything began to fly all over
2 the place. I pulled the sheets down to change the
3 sheets in the place, and I swear there were at least
4 a hundred bugs on those sheets. My wife and I just
5 couldn't believe it. So, we just gave up right then.

6 .And we went over to another main house where other
7 Scientologists were in there. So, we went over there
8 and simply told the guy in charge, "Hey, there's no way
9 we're going to stay in that place. I mean, there's been
10 some big, bad mistake. This is the limit."

11 So, they had this main -- this Master at Arms they
12 call him. He came over and he said, "Well, there's
13 nothing we can do about it now." It was probably midnight
14 by this time. He said, "Just go in and clean the place
15 the best you can, stay there the night, and we'll have
16 a better place for you tomorrow." So, we argued with
17 him for quite some time, but there wasn't any more I could
18 get from him. So, we finally said, "There's nothing else
19 we can do, so we'll have to spend the night."

20 So, one of the other arguments about this spot --
21 we had been forewarned when we got there that they were
22 having a lot of trouble with break-ins and burglars. We
23 were close to the Mexican border and they were breaking
24 into places and stealing. And they had just broken in ..

1 the shack we were in the night before. They told us
2 about this. The bathroom window was broken and they had
3 it boarded up.

4 So, I said, "Well, I don't like the idea of being
5 in here, either." We didn't want to be there. "Don't
6 worry," he says, "there's a burglar alarm system all
7 around here." He said, "Didn't you see it in there?"
8 I said, "Yeah, I saw the tape for the burglar alarm; I'm
9 familiar with those things. But it's not connected. How
10 is it going to ring an alarm?" "Oh, we're going to fix
11 that tomorrow." Of course, they never fixed it tomorrow
12 They never got rid of the bugs or anything else.

13 The next morning, we were picked up and taken back
14 to the main ranch. Well, we were just furious by then,
15 both us. So, I went up to the person who was responsible
16 for getting us there - I happened to see him the first
17 thing - and I just chewed him out. I said, "Get me the
18 hell out of here; I ain't staying in this place." Well,
19 they told us to calm down and finally got us to calm
20 down.

21 They took us into the -- sent us into the chaplain.
22 Of course, we didn't get to see the chaplain. The chap-
23 lain was gone, so we spent about three hours with the
24 chaplain's wife. Of course, all she did was just lie to

1 us again: lie after lie after lie about they had another
2 ranch and they were going to put us in that and we'd
3 get our own private room. It was real nice and they
4 were just refurbishing it that day and they were sorry
5 about the inconvenience, but we were brought down way
6 ahead of time. I said, "You say we were brought down
7 ahead of time. The girl and the man who came down to
8 get us into the place were budging us daily to get here
9 because they were holding up production on the movies,
10 and they had to get us here right away to get things
11 going. So," I said, "we came here as quick as we could."

12 Then -- so, anyway, I spent about -- first, I
13 said, "Just get us the hell out of here. We're going
14 home. I won't stay here -- no way." She said, "Well,
15 you can't leave here." I said, "What do you mean, I
16 can't leave here? Are you trying to tell me I'm a
17 prisoner here?" "Well, you're not a prisoner." I said,
18 "Well, then, fine. If I'm not a prisoner, get me out
19 of here. That's all I want; I want transportation out
20 of here, and that's all there is to it."

21 Well, this went on about three hours and, finally,
22 we finally said, "Well, we'll agree to take a better look
23 at it. This is nothing what we expected or were told.
24 But," we said, "there's a problem involved: all of our

1 personal belongings, and we don't want to leave without
2 them." So, we managed to stay -- decided to stay, at
3 least a few more days, to see what happened. Well,
4 nothing happened.

5 Now, we went to work. Our working conditions were
6 not the same as explained before: seven o'clock in the
7 morning till eleven, twelve at night. I started belly-
8 aching the first week for my weekend off that I was
9 supposed to have, and they said, "You don't get a weekend
10 off." Well, I went through all that stuff with the
11 chaplain: "Sorry they lied to you about it. There's
12 nothing we can do now. We're punishing the person that
13 told you all these things." In fact, they were. The
14 three people involved were in the RPF when we got there.
15 And I argued, of course, and said, "I didn't give a damn
16 what you do with them. I want to know what you're going
17 to do with me?"

18 Now, the other thing, too -- let me explain this to
19 you here. The other things that make a lot of difference
20 to the things I have to say is that we were not pro-
21 grammed into Scientology; we were not brainwashed. We
22 were not following a great guiding light or any great
23 pull that L. Ron Hubbard had. So, this, then, here --
24 you know, the other people who went there -- all the other

1 people who went there, they accepted those conditions.
2 It was all right with them. They didn't seem to mind
3 the bugs and the snakes and all the other things that
4 were involved there: the lousy food, the lousy living
5 conditions, all the dirt. They didn't seem to mind that.
6 Be we did. I mean, I would never have gone if I had
7 any idea what I was going to find. So, this covers
8 that.

9 But anyway, I decided to make another try at it;
10 my wife and I both decided. Of course, this is the part
11 that -- and one of the other things that was the main
12 reason for us getting into it is my wife had taken -
13 we both had - a swine flu shot, and she had quite a
14 reaction from that. I think they call it dysentery or --
15 I don't know what it was. In other words, she had a
16 condition that was not correctable, and we'd been to a
17 number of doctors. It had gone on for about three, four,
18 five, six months. That was one thing that they had
19 assured us Scientology had the knowledge and knowhow to
20 correct. Now, when somebody has a diarrhea condition
21 like that for four, five months, believe me, they are
22 pretty weak and pretty run down. They're just a wreck
23 healthwise because they feel in a bad state.

24 So, of course, that's one of the things I gave in

1 on, and realizing that perhaps they had the answer or
2 would have the answer for -- to bring her back to health.
3 So, that's, of course, one of the other reasons we
4 decided to stay. I wanted to see what they were going
5 to do for her. Well, they didn't do anything for her.

6 And it went on. We asked for auditing and medical
7 care and various things like this here to get her started
8 on a program of going back to good health. Well, "We
9 don't have any auditors right now." I said, "Well, you
10 told us to come down and that you had the top auditors
11 in the nation and they really had this thing under
12 control." "Well, we don't have any. We're starting to
13 train some." So, another big let down in a long line on
14 that issue.

15 In other words, it was just nothing but a total
16 pack of lies the entire time that I was there. And I
17 kept watching for the rest of my personal belongings to
18 get there from Los Angeles. When they finally got there,
19 I went back and I told them, "Hey, I want out. There's
20 no way that I intend to stay here. You totally mis-
21 represented to me and this is not what I'm going to put
22 up with. I have no desire whatsoever to dedicate my life
23 to L. Ron Hubbard." And --

24 MR. LeCHER: Tell me how you --

1 MR. HARTWELL: I beg your pardon?

2 MR. LeCHER: I'm just trying to get -- all right.
3 You're moving right along.

4 MR. HARTWELL: So, anyway, I regularly told them I
5 wanted to leave. They wanted a board meeting, and they
6 wanted to know why and all this -- and all the reasons
7 why, and I had to give them all the reasons why.

8 So, it was then a matter of deciding what to do,
9 what the next step was. They had decided to release me.
10 They sent me out the next day, and they were releasing
11 Dell and I both. Now, this went on for, again, a matter
12 of two weeks more before they finally released me. They
13 had excuses every day why I couldn't go. First, it was
14 one thing, the next day it was something else, the next
15 day it was something else. This went on day after day.

16 And then, in the meantime, too, they had started
17 a program of forcing Dell and I against each other, which,
18 I understand is a common practice with anybody that have
19 trouble with in Scientology. The first thing they do is
20 work the couple against each other. And they had started
21 this and got it going pretty good. I got to where I
22 wasn't quite believing what Dell said and she wasn't
23 quite believing what I said.

24 And they were making her believe that they couldn't

1 do anything for her about her health program until they
2 got rid of me, because I was the one that was causing the
3 trouble for her. And they began to have her believe
4 this.

5 So, I finally got out. It was one of the hardest
6 things --

7 MR. FLYNN: If I may interrupt just a minute,
8 Mayor: That last point is a very significant point in
9 the consideration of the Commission. And you may recall -
10 just make a note of that - that they led Mrs. Hartwell to
11 believe that her illness was being caused by Mr. Hartwell
12 and you will hear in later testimony precisely why. But
13 you might make a specific note of that point.

14 MR. HARTWELL: So, anyway, as I started to say,
15 this was all -- on the last day, they made a decision
16 the wife wouldn't go with me; she would stay there. And
17 we sat down and talked it over, and we finally decided
18 that maybe there was something to what they were saying,
19 number one.

20 Also, was the fact that I had to go back to Las
21 Vegas and obtain a job. I didn't have any at that time;
22 I no longer had a job. I didn't have any insurance; I
23 didn't have enough money to get the medical treatment
24 for her; I had no way of covering anything while I was

1 there. So, we finally decided the best thing to do was
2 to go back -- for me to go back and leave her there and,
3 perhaps, they would take care of her then.

4 And then, the other thing, too, is the daughter was
5 so brainwashed by that time, I couldn't reason with her
6 anymore. I mean, I saw what a hopeless mess it was, and
7 I tried to reason with her a number of times, but she
8 just wouldn't accept anything I had to say at all. She
9 was totally brainwashed into -- she was in heaven. So, it
10 was hard to do, to leave.

11 MR. LeCHER: Let's take about a five-minute break.

12 (Whereupon, a recess was taken.)

13 (Whereupon, the hearing resumed.)

14 MR. LeCHER: Staff, Commissioners, consultants,
15 ladies and gentlemen, take your seats. Officers, when
16 the people are in, close the door.

17 Mrs. Garvey -- okay.

18 MRS. GARVEY: Right here.

19 MR. LeCHER: Vision, are we on?

20 All right.

21 We are back from a short recess. And if you're
22 just joining us, we're talking to Mr. Ernest Hartwell
23 who was promised to come to Mecca, to Clearwater, sold
24 his possessions and tried to find his daughter, and

1 somehow ended up in a desert. And so far, he's gone
2 three thousand miles away from here.

3
4 ERNEST HARTWELL, Resumed.

5 MR. LeCHER: And I'd like you to continue where you
6 left off, sir.

7 MR. HARTWELL: Okay.

8 First thing I want to say is I'm sorry..

9 MRS. GARVEY: No, that's fine.

10 MR. HATCHETT: No.

11 MR. BERFIELD: No apologies.

12 MR. HARTWELL: That was one of the bad things about
13 the Church: breaking up families. It seems like they
14 do everything they can to destroy families and happiness.
15 For me, like I said, it was the hardest thing I ever
16 had to do in my life, leaving them there in the condition
17 that they were in and leaving them with a man that was
18 totally insane.

19 Now, I hadn't said it before, but I want to say
20 that. A number of people, when I came back, asked me
21 what I thought of L. Ron Hubbard, and I told them, "The
22 man's crazy; he's absolutely insane." Now, that's my
23 own personal belief, my observations.

24 He was a screaming maniac, the three or four times

1 that I saw him. One of the times I saw him, he came in
2 and issued conflicting orders. He'd tell you to do one
3 thing and turn around two minutes later and tell you not
4 to do it. And he expected you to do those orders.

5 Anyway, I got out and -- then, after I got back to
6 Las Vegas, it was a matter of about a month and-a-half
7 before I went back to work. And when I got back to
8 work -- shortly after I got back to work, the chaplain
9 from there, Fred Burke, came to Las Vegas and approached
10 me with a story that he had heard I was responsible for
11 disclosing the location where L. Ron Hubbard was. Of
12 course, I told him he was wrong, and I said, "Chase it
13 down." "Fine, I'll chase it down."

14 Then, he produced our marriage license and told
15 me that he obtained the marriage license from my wife
16 and that she wanted a divorce. And this was something
17 that just left me speechless because I couldn't believe
18 it. I felt we had a real strong thing going for each
19 other; we did have. We were real close to each other.
20 We never had any real trouble until this thing came up
21 in our married lives. So, I just couldn't believe it.

22 But anyway, he left. And after he left, the more
23 I thought about it, the more confused than anything else
24 I became on it. And so, I -- oh, the other thing is that

1 he wanted to know if they could use my address, and would
2 I accept passports for Fre-Dawn and Dell. And I wondered
3 what for, and he said, "Well, they're moving out of the
4 United States, going to a foreign country, so they'll
5 have to have passports. And they have to have a local
6 address to send the passport to." And so, I told him,
7 "Yes." You know, I was just so shocked, I couldn't figure
8 out what they wanted.

9 Then, of course, after that, they had me -- worked
10 on me, and it became more upsetting. But I did manage to
11 get Dell back home a month or so after that.

12 Now, just shortly after she came back home, they
13 approached Dell and said that she would have to pay a
14 five thousand, five hundred dollar freeloader debt that
15 was incurred for the time that she was in there for
16 expenses and for services that she had received, or she
17 would have to go back on staff as a member of the Church
18 of Scientology locally. So, when I heard that I just --
19 I almost went right through the ceiling.

20 So, I went down to the office, the GO's office,
21 and told them, "Hey, there's some big, fat mistake.
22 We were cleared of it and notice was put on the bulletin
23 board that we were being released free and clear of any
24 debts. And now, you're coming back and telling me we owe

1 five thousand dollars. This is a big mistake." So,
2 they called me back a couple of days later and said,
3 "Well, Hartwell, we want to inform you that now you owe
4 five thousand, five hundred dollars, as well as your
5 wife. So, you have a ten thousand, five hundred dollar
6 debt to Scientology." Jesus.

7 Of course, I went, you know, as far as I could
8 go with it, locally: back to her daughter, back to
9 them. We had been writing letters back and forth, and
10 I kept getting stalled and stalled and stalled. And
11 so, I finally went down there to get some help, and I
12 told them -- hell, but I got the letter then that I was
13 free and clear, we didn't owe any debts.

14 I went back to Las Vegas, and her daughter, the
15 next morning, came to our house and wanted us to go down
16 to Scientology and sign another document. She wanted
17 us to sign another document. I said, "Why do I want to
18 sign another document? I want to be clear of them and
19 they want to be clear of me."

20 Well, they're, of course, a highly paranoid opera-
21 tion. That's what they are. They're just scared to
22 death that somebody is going to let it be known where
23 Ron is or some of the secrets of the Church.

24 So, we spent three hours with her daughter, there-

1 abouts, arguing about: "Hey, I've been through this
2 goddamn thing for days. I don't want to ever hear any-
3 thing more about it. Get out of here and leave me
4 alone. I ain't going to -- I ain't signing no papers."
5 And this discussion went on about that they just had a
6 couple of questions they wanted ask us. I said, "Ask
7 me." She said, "They want to do that down at the
8 Church." "No way." So, I finally got them out of
9 there.

10 Then -- I got them out with the agreement that
11 we would go down in a couple of days and find out what
12 it was all about and see what they wanted. So, we went
13 down in a couple more days and, now, they've got
14 another -- they want me to sign another letter, stating
15 I owe them thirty thousand dollars if I say anything
16 more about the Church of Scientology, and I had welshed
17 on my agreement with them by threatening and this sort
18 of thing here. I had threatened them, of course. But
19 I had done it. And I was just trying to get them off
20 my back.

21 So, now, this goes on. They tell me what they
22 want. I said, "Hey, I aint signing an agreement like
23 that. You don't have to worry about me." Now, I out-
24 lined the agreement. "Of all the things that we were

1 supposed to do, I held up my part of the bargain on
2 everything. I said nothing about anything. But you
3 people have doublecrossed me, lied to me, and double
4 dealt me time after time after time. Now, I want a
5 letter from the Church of Scientology that says you're
6 going to leave me alone. And you get off my back. I'm
7 not on yours; you get off my back." I told them how to
8 write the letter.

9 Well, of course, two days later they called me
10 back and told me, "Yeah, we have an agreement here just
11 like you wanted. Come down and sign it." So, I went
12 down and it was the same thing. So, we had another half
13 a dozen meetings and, finally, the organization said
14 there was nothing more they could do about it. I said,
15 "Well, fine."

16 Now, harrassment went on for months after that.
17 They sent a fellow out from the main organization in
18 Los Angeles, and he started a big harrassment campaign.
19 And it ended up by them finally telling me that they had
20 definite proof that I was trying to extort money from the
21 Church of Scientology and they were going to put me in
22 jail if I didn't sign the new agreement.

23 This agreement here - and we had some arguing on
24 this one, too - but they were trying to get me to state --

1 sign statements to the fact that I had been an alcoholic
2 all my life, that I had totally neglected my own chil-
3 dren, and that I had been abusive to my children: I
4 was a poor father and poor provider. And I had -- just
5 a number of inflammatory statements like this. Of
6 course, the last statement was that I did now owe the
7 Church of Scientology sixty thousand dollars, and I was
8 supposed to sign this thing. I said, "Hey, no way."
9 So -- and not in such nice terms like that, you know.

10 Anyway, that same night, they had sent Dell's
11 daughter to our house where we were living. And she
12 went there - she'll tell you her version of the story -
13 to threaten her with our lives. So, after that -- up
14 until that point, I didn't realize what demons we were
15 dealing with. I didn't realize that they were lying
16 and trying to do everything that they could to destroy
17 us.

18 Actually, they had cost us our jobs, cost both
19 of us our jobs. They had us moved out of the place we
20 were living in. I don't -- Dell will probably tell you
21 about other things that happened to us. But that was
22 the last -- when they threatened to put us in jail, I
23 went to the police department then and, in fact, I did
24 fear for my life. I got scared, and I did get scared,

1 because it's a known fact that there are a lot of
2 suicides connected with Scientology. I didn't want to
3 be one of them. So, I went to the police department
4 and told them what happened. And the next day, I took
5 Dell down and she made a report on the same thing.

6 And then, I went to the newspapers. I told them
7 everything about where L. Ron Hubbard was, what the
8 Church was like, what they were doing. I went to tele-
9 vision stations; I went to radio stations; I got on the
10 air, and I knew if it got public, they'd quit. I figured
11 that's the only way of having my freedom. And sure
12 enough, it worked. They didn't bother me from the day
13 after. The first time to come on, they didn't bother me
14 a bit. So, I guess that's the last story of the things
15 that happened.

16 MR. LeCHER: Did they sue you?

17 MR. HARTWELL: Well, yes. And after that they
18 brought a lawsuit against me.

19 MR. CALDERBANK: What was the --

20 MR. HARTWELL: Well, I forget what the --

21 MR. LeCHER: Well, let's not get into that. They left
22 you alone as far as dirty tricks, but they did bring a
23 lawsuit against you?

24 MR. HARTWELL: Yes, right.

1 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

2 MR. HARTWELL: Oh, yes, here's several things
3 that happened now. They, too, went public, and they
4 made public statements to the fact that I was an
5 alcoholic, I had a drinking problem, that I had murdered
6 my father. They took -- let's see, there were several
7 other things they brought out; I don't know.

8 Oh, there's another thing is that they ran a story
9 in the newspapers that I was guilty of extortion, that
10 they had definite proof in the Church of Scientology
11 that Ernie Hartwell was trying to extort money from
12 them. They ran that in the newspapers and on television,
13 the same story. So, these things, of course, happened,
14 too.

15 MR. LeCHER: Tell me about -- your daughter tried
16 to kill you, did you say, or threatened your life?

17 MR. HARTWELL: I beg your pardon?

18 MR. LeCHER: You say your daughter tried to kill
19 you or threatened your life?

20 MR. HARTWELL: No, she didn't. I think, probably,
21 it would be better if my wife would tell that story
22 because I might --

23 MR. LeCHER: Why don't we have your wife come up
24 now and tell her -- what she'd like to say. Then, we

1 could question both of you when it's appropriate.

2 Mrs. Hartwell, will you please be sworn in, please,
3 by Miss Goudeau?

4
5 ADELL HARTWELL, a witness herein,
6 having first been duly sworn by a Clerk for the City of
7 Clearwater, was examined and testified as follows:

8 MR. LeCHER: I must ask you the same five standard
9 questions that I asked your husband and I've been asking
10 everyone that appeared before us as witnesses.

11 Number one: Are you appearing today and testifying
12 under oath voluntarily?

13 MRS. HARTWELL: Yes, I am.

14 MR. LeCHER: Have you been paid by anyone for your
15 testimony, other than expenses for coming to Clearwater?

16 MRS. HARTWELL: No.

17 MR. LeCHER: Do you have a lawsuit against the
18 Church of Scientology?

19 MRS. HARTWELL: Yes, we do.

20 MR. LeCHER: Does the Church of Scientology have
21 a lawsuit against you?

22 MRS. HARTWELL: Yes.

23 MR. LeCHER: Has anyone suggested to you that you
24 should state anything but the truth or has anyone

1 suggested that you change your testimony for any reason?

2 MRS. HARTWELL: No.

3 MR. LeCHER: Thank you.

4 Now, if you would tell your story in your own
5 words, please.

6 MRS. HARTWELL: I think Ernie has covered quite a
7 bit of it, except that I would like to say that when I
8 found out I was going into the desert, my heart just
9 sunk because it wasn't where I wanted to go, either.

10 Also, I'd like to say that when we did get united
11 with Fre-Dawn down there, I realized how brainwashed --
12 that she was cold.

13 MR. LeCHER: Fre-Dawn is your daughter?

14 MRS. HARTWELL: Yes.

15 She wasn't the same girl that left us. I can't
16 quite explain it, but it was just a cold feeling.

17 I was appalled, like Ernie said, with the swearing,
18 the cussing. In fact, I was crying one day and said I'd
19 have to go home to learn to cuss and swear before I'd
20 ever survive down there.

21 And then, another thing that was real shocking, I
22 was in the shed one day, the wardrobe, working, and I
23 heard -- I hadn't met Hubbard at this time. And I heard
24 this terrible screaming filthy language like I had never

1 heard before. I had something in my hand and it fell to
2 the floor and my mouth flew open. I said, "Who in the
3 world is that?" And they said it was the Boss, because
4 we weren't allowed to use the word "Hubbard" for security
5 reasons. And I said, "You mean, the leader of the Church
6 speaks like that?" And they said, "Yes. He doesn't
7 believe in keeping anything back." So, that was
8 another -- quite a shock.

9 The main thing that I disliked, too, was, when we
10 first got there, we were -- before we could see the
11 place, we had to be programmed on the lies that we had
12 to tell. If we run into one of our friends, we had to
13 tell a lie to them and tell them that we were just there
14 for a vacation. We had the man's name and everything to
15 give. We had to go twenty-five miles to use the tele-
16 phone, and always, usually, there was somebody with us;
17 we couldn't use the phone. There was no papers; we never
18 read the paper.

19 We were schooled on how to get away from process
20 servers, FBI agents, any government official or any
21 policeman who wanted anything to do with Hubbard. We
22 had to -- if we had to, there was four different ways
23 that they trained us to handle them, even if we used --
24 had to use mental force -- physical force. And that went

1 on for days, that training. One of us would be the
2 FBI agent and the other one would be who we are, you
3 know, until we had it down pat.

4 We also had to lie if we ran into Scientologists.
5 We were here in Clearwater on a mission and we were
6 returning. There was no way that we could have friends
7 or relatives come and see us. We were just like we had
8 been cut off from the world. We were behind closed --
9 locked doors with curtains always pulled.

10 If the utility man or anybody came on the property,
11 we were alerted. We were to stay in as much as possible
12 not run around, watch our language -- or their language;
13 I was all right. And they were to -- we were to hide
14 anything pertaining to the word "Scientology" in books
15 or anything that would disclose that it was the Church
16 of Scientology.

17 We also had to -- anytime we left from one building to
18 another, everything that we carried had to be in sacks.
19 There was nothing that could be visible that had "Scien-
20 tology" on it. And that was always a worry. And when
21 we were outside, we were not to use the language that
22 Scientology used. And so you were under constant strain.
23 And I was even afraid to go on lib because I was afraid
24 that I would disclose his hideout by saying something.

1 And Fred Roth was put in the RPF because he said the
2 word "Scientology" on the golf course. So, this is how
3 rough it was.

4 We also -- oh, there was something I wanted to
5 say about -- the way they got my marriage license was
6 we had to make a story up about where we were -- that
7 we were going overseas because Ron's hideout had been
8 exposed to the government. And they made me believe it
9 was Ernie that disclosed it.

10 And so, he needed our marriage license, and I
11 didn't even question it. And he also needed my -- our
12 birth certificates, Fre-Dawn's and mine. It wasn't
13 just us; it was everybody in the Los Angeles area that
14 was down there that had to get passports. So, their
15 loved ones all thought they were going overseas, and so
16 that way they couldn't contact them here -- where we
17 were.

18 We were given a lawyer's name and address that we
19 had to memorize. We couldn't leave the base until we
20 had it memorized perfectly in case there was an accident
21 or we were ill or in a hospital, and we were to use this
22 lawyer's name and he would come and take care of every-
23 thing.

24 When they went to the doctors or the dentists, we

1 would always use -- I used my real name. I think they
2 used your real name, but they always went by someplace
3 and picked up a fake address and said that we were
4 friends staying with someone. There was always people
5 going to and from the doctors.

6 L. Ron Hubbard believed that anybody that was ill
7 was a double threat to him: number one, he couldn't --
8 they couldn't produce, so they were no good to him;
9 number two, he was terrified of a germ of any kind, and
10 so they were locked up in, I'd say, about a ten by
11 twelve room. And at one time there was thirteen boys
12 and girls in this room, running high fevers and all of
13 them smoking. I mean, you could hardly see within there,
14 it was so terrible. And you were treated -- they were
15 treated like an enemy in this room, and because they
16 were.

17 Hubbard, I saw him throw fits. I actually saw him
18 take his hat off one day and stomp on it and cry like
19 a baby. I have seen him just take his arm like this
20 and throw it wild and hit girls in the face. And one
21 girl would follow him with a chair. If he sat down,
22 that chair had to be right where he was going to sit.
23 One girl missed by a few inches; he about fell off of
24 it, and she was put in the RPF.

1 And the other girl would carry an ashtray, catching
2 his cigarette ash. They had to pop the cigarettes in
3 his mouth when he wanted it. He had one man that would
4 just wash his clothes and tended them, changed his
5 clothes for him. He had a nurse. He had one woman who
6 did nothing but clean the house. And he had one man
7 that did nothing but cook his three meals a day. It
8 took him from about six in the morning till about ten at
9 night to get those three meals prepared.

10 I was with Hubbard every day for about a month.
11 I should say, every night. We would start -- our daily
12 job would start about twelve o'clock, and we would go --
13 at noon, and we would go until the sun came up the next
14 morning, and a lot -- most of the time without anything
15 to eat after six o'clock at night. And so, we were
16 working almost around the clock, except for the evening
17 meal.

18 They said that they couldn't -- no way could they
19 give me any auditing because of my illness, because
20 Ernie was upset and had me upset and that, as soon as
21 Ernie left, why, then, they would start and give me real
22 auditing and get me to the doctor.

23 By the way, when they came to sign us up, I
24 explained to them my trouble and I told them that I needed

1 a good doctor and I did think that, maybe, auditing
2 would help, and which they promised me both. And -- so
3 this is one of the -- they showed me a picture of the
4 hotel and said that "Do you think that Hubbard would
5 live in anything any worse than this?" So, naturally,
6 that's where we expected to come.

7 Okay. The RPF down there didn't function like
8 it did over here because they had no place for the RPF.

9 Another thing, when we went out days, we were
10 schooled that we had to -- it was a bad place for rattle-
11 snakes, scorpions, and, of course, black widow spiders.
12 We had to wear boots and carry flashlights at night.

13 The RPF had their clothes in boxes, and their
14 mattresses were thrown out on the ground with the spiders
15 and the scorpions. They had to run everywhere; you
16 couldn't talk to them. I was written up several times
17 for talking to Fre-Dawn.

18 I also saw her one day -- every time I would go
19 by on my way to work, I would see her dragging her
20 mattress from one shade tree to the other. I said,
21 "Why are you doing this?" And she was ill and she
22 couldn't be in with the others, and so she was hunting
23 shade and keeping out of the -- it's 117 degrees, and
24 she was hunting shade because she was ill.

1 I was worked one day -- ironed out in the heat --
2 out in, I mean, in the shade. And it was 102 degrees
3 then and without any food the whole day. And by five-
4 thirty I just got deathly ill, and I told them I had to
5 leave. And I staggered quite a ways -- it's about three
6 blocks from where we were shooting to where we -- up to
7 where we -- where the dorm was. And I was staggering.
8 I fell first in the -- then, in the ditch; it was like I
9 was drunk. But anyway, I made it to the bunk and just
10 crashed.

11 They came in and woke me up and said at seven
12 o'clock I had to go down because Hubbard was going to
13 be on the set. And I wouldn't do it. And I was written
14 up because I took a three-hour nap.

15 So, this -- and another time I complained I
16 had to go home because I wasn't being treated. I was
17 thin and bleeding and in quite severe pain, and they took
18 me right in and put me on the Meter, said I could go
19 home -- or go right to the doctor. And the next night
20 they had us scrubbing the barn. We started at six
21 o'clock and we scrubbed that barn until four o'clock in
22 the morning, and they had me carry the buckets of water.

23 And this -- nobody -- anybody that run a fever was
24 immediately put out of commission. But anybody that was

1 ill and not running a fever, they were made fun of and
2 ridiculed because they thought more of their body than
3 they did of Hubbard's work.

4 There was no unity; there was no working together.
5 It was, like, if you were going over here and somebody
6 was coming this way, you couldn't stop and say, "Hello,"
7 because, then, that would stop you and slow you down so
8 you might not get your work done.

9 And one day we were laughing and joking on the job,
10 and the supervisor told us if she ever caught us doing
11 that again we'd go in the RPF. It was strictly work,
12 no pleasure.

13 If you were in the lower conditions, all money
14 stopped coming in, what little of it there was. You
15 didn't get any pay and you didn't get any lib; you were
16 just held prisoner.

17 While I was there -- when we first got there,
18 about two days after we left home, which was about a
19 five-hour trip, my nephew drowned. And we didn't get
20 word -- it took ten days for them to notify us that my
21 nephew had died. And this was by a letter from my sister
22 that went to Clearwater and then back to where we were,
23 because they wouldn't give us a telephone call. All our
24 mail was read before it got to that base. I wrote three

1 letters to Ernie before I got through, and I finally said
2 everything was going great because everything else came
3 back and I had to rewrite it. All the mail, like I
4 said, had to come here and then go to Clearwater.

5 Nearly every time I went to the phone after Ernie
6 left, I had to be -- there was a guard with us. I could
7 never be alone after that.

8 Oh, by the way, too, when my nephew did die and I
9 got word of it, I demanded that I go into Palm Springs
10 and make a phone call to my sister. And it took us from
11 seven o'clock in the morning till about six-thirty that
12 night. And they finally give us this broken-down truck.
13 We had to buy the gas. They gave us two hours. If we
14 weren't back in two hours, they were going to call the
15 police and have us arrested for stealing the truck.

16 I saw a man -- I don't know how many were at the base
17 while I was there, but it was quite a few. I saw a
18 grown man, such as my husband -- he cried for days,
19 maybe two to three days. And they were under constant
20 guard before they were allowed to leave. They drove
21 people so close to suicide before they were allowed to
22 leave that base. The women was just constantly crying,
23 and it was -- it just tore me up.

24 I also, the last month I was there, was following

1 Hubbard's orders, and I read this one that - I don't
2 know how many times I had to read it before it could
3 really sink in - was that Elaine Wright was going to
4 commit suicide. And Hubbard -- this is what the order
5 said, "I don't care if Elaine Wright is going to commit
6 suicide or not, but get her off of my land before she
7 does." Where was the help? You know, where was the
8 religious counseling?

9 The only time that the word "God" was used was in
10 vain, and I mean, it was used constantly. There was no
11 civil talking to each other. It was all cussing and
12 swearing.

13 I know one night I had to cry, and crying would
14 take me into Ethics. So, I laid out on the diving board
15 where I could see all around me and I had me a cry.

16 Another thing that was shocking, too, was that
17 Ernie wrote me a most wonderful letter, and I was so
18 thrilled because he was taking -- he was on the horse
19 and he was doing so great, and I thought, "Well, gee,
20 I'll show them." So, I showed it to one of the girls,
21 and she said, "You can go right down into Ethics." And
22 she said, "And you get this straightened out right now."
23 They don't want you to be happy. They don't want you to
24 be united; it's just individualism.

1 I saw my daughter very little because she, first,
2 was in the RPF. Then, they got -- they put her in
3 isolation again. She got ill; her fever went up one
4 degree and down one degree, and she was in there for
5 about two and-a-half months in this one room, not allowed
6 to see anybody. You can imagine what that has done to
7 her brain.

8 Then, when we did come home, we thought everything
9 was going smooth and everything, then, the harrassment
10 started. The night that -- it was twelve-thirty at
11 night when Mary Louise came to my home and she kept
12 trying to get me out of the house. I was -- a mother is
13 the only one who would know the feeling I had. I opened
14 the door and I was really scared of my daughter. And
15 yet, I can't tell you why, except her face, her eyes,
16 and her attitude. I refused to leave the house. And I
17 can't really remember anything that went on all the time
18 that Ernie was with Alan Hubbard. And she wanted to
19 know if we were afraid for our lives, and I told her,
20 "Yes." And then, the police told us we should report
21 that.

22 And then, the next day we were told that we had
23 to move out. And then, the next day they came on my
24 job. I worked at MGM, where it was strictly guarded,

1 with millions of dollars of money in costumes, and I
2 turned around and my daughter was there. And she come --
3 I told her not to come in again, she was jeopardizing my
4 job. She came back two different times and brought Alan
5 Hubbard with her, once. The last time she told me that --
6 she said, "I want you to know that nobody has been
7 murdered over any of these things yet. But it's going
8 to get a lot worse before it gets any better." And I
9 started to cry and I said, "Yes, I know it is." Then,
10 she put her arms around me and said she loved me.

11 Sorry.

12 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Hartwell, how -- I think we've
13 heard enough as far as your narrative. I'm just going
14 to ask you a few questions, then, I'll turn it over to
15 Mr. Calderbank.

16 I -- it just seems incredible that a couple like
17 you sells everything and tries to be a -- wants to be
18 a dancer and maybe make movies, and you're given this
19 carrot which is a brochure of sparkling Clearwater, and
20 you end up in a desert, and you can't leave, and your
21 marriage is about to fall apart. You're separated, you're
22 divided, you found her. And your daughters want nothing
23 to do with you. And you're destroyed financially and
24 mentally. That's just difficult for me to believe and, I'm

1 sure, everyone in this room. And I, frankly, don't know
2 where to start to ask questions. I think you've said
3 it all.

4 So, for the time being, I will just yield and --
5 maybe Mr. Calderbank has something to ask you.

6 MR. FLYNN: I think Mrs. Hartwell has one more
7 thing.

8 MRS. HARTWELL: There was another time that was
9 really terrifying, and this was when Ernie had all his
10 meetings with them to get me out of there. But this was
11 why Alan said I had to be there, because I had --

12 MR. LeCHER: Who's Alan?

13 MRS. HARTWELL: Alan Hubbard was the man sent from
14 California to handle us.

15 MR. LeCHER: Any relation?

16 MRS. HARTWELL: No.

17 Anyway, he -- so, he went down the hotel room --
18 a motel room to meet with him. He was all alone. And
19 there was both my daughters and their husbands, and they
20 had flown my daughter and her husband in from India just
21 to use against us. And they were -- came in the night
22 before and they hadn't even called us. They hid my other
23 daughter's car so we wouldn't know that she was there.

24 And we started talking. And all of a sudden,

1 another one that was with Alan Hubbard -- I don't know
2 him, I don't know why he was -- I got so terrified.
3 But he, all of a sudden, jumped up and started to yell
4 at Ernie, saying what a beast he was, what a terrible
5 man I had because he was trying to extort money from the
6 Church, he was no good, that I knew what was right and
7 what was wrong. I had to get rid of him; I needed to
8 divorce Ernie and get back into the Church because I knew
9 what was right.

10 And finally, Ernie got me out of the room. I
11 just -- I think -- it seems to me like it went on for
12 hours; I don't know how long it did, but to me it seemed
13 forever.

14 But Ernie tried to get me to drive home, but I
15 couldn't because I felt like, if I had left the room
16 that day, I'd never see my daughters again, and it was
17 close to being true.

18 MR. LeCHER: Where are your daughters now?

19 MRS. HARTWELL: One is in Las Vegas; we never talk
20 to her. And the other one's in LA.

21 MR. LeCHER: And they're still in the Church of
22 Scientology?

23 MRS. HARTWELL: Yes.

24 MR. LeCHER: Why couldn't you leave? You didn't

1 have a car, were you that far out in the desert, or were
2 you broken spiritually or --

3 MRS. HARTWELL: I was still hanging onto I had
4 to get to a doctor. And when Ernie comes home, no job
5 to go to, he didn't have the money to get me to a doctor.
6 And I had been told that if I didn't get attention soon
7 it would be cancer. And so, I was still hanging onto
8 them getting me to a doctor, which they did in September.
9 They finally got me to a doctor.

10 MR. LeCHER: Did Mr. Hubbard cure your cancer?

11 MRS. HARTWELL: Oh, yes. I wasn't -- no, he
12 couldn't cure anything. He was terrified of getting sick.

13 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Calderbank.

14 MR. CALDERBANK: It's hard to ask questions after
15 that.

16 Dell, would you like to take a break?

17 MRS. HARTWELL: I'm fine.

18 MR. LeCHER: One thing: What year, for the record,
19 did this take place?

20 MRS. HARTWELL: '78 and nine, was it?

21 MR. LeCHER: Well, when did you leave for Clear-
22 water and end up in the desert? What year was that? How
23 long were you in the desert?

24 MRS. HARTWELL: It was -- I think it was --

1 MR. HARTWELL: In '79.

2 MRS. HARTWELL: -- May of '79 we went. Ernie came
3 back in July; I came back in October.

4 MR. LeCHER: Did you ever make it to Clearwater
5 until today?

6 MRS. HARTWELL: Yes. I -- a year and-a-half ago
7 I was here for the Tenney trial.

8 MR. LeCHER: I have no questions, Commissioners. I
9 don't know if you want to question them anymore. I think
10 we've heard everything. I don't think we should question
11 them, but if there's something you want to ask for the
12 record, go ahead.

13 Mr. Calderbank, first.

14 MR. CALDERBANK: Just very clearly: The main
15 reason you got -- Clearwater was held out to you, and
16 the whole start of your entire journey was that you were
17 coming to Clearwater --

18 MRS. HARTWELL: Oh, yes.

19 MR. CALDERBANK: -- this beautiful city?

20 MRS. HARTWELL: I should clear up one thing.

21 We were to come to Clearwater and go a short dis-
22 tance from Clearwater because Hubbard wasn't in the Fort
23 Harrison Hotel, but he was close by.

24 MR. CALDERBANK: Did you ever hear the term

1 "Dunedin" used?

2 MRS. HARTWELL: The what?

3 MR. CALDERBANK: Dunedin.

4 MR. LeCHER: It's a city -- a town north of us.

5 MRS. HARTWELL: No.

6 MR. CALDERBANK: It's interesting - this is a
7 little off the subject and you don't know about this -
8 but everybody in Clearwater, virtually, was sent a
9 booklet from the Church of Scientology. I think it was
10 "The Way to Happiness." It had various numbers, and
11 they said "The Way to Happiness, quote, unquote, was not
12 to lie, not to do illegal acts, and one of the major
13 tenets was to keep the family together. And --

14 MRS. GARVEY: It's written by --

15 MR. CALDERBANK: Written by and copyrighted by
16 Mr. L. Ron Hubbard.

17 I know you've answered it, but how would you
18 characterize that? What would you say to people of
19 Clearwater that would receive a book like that? How
20 would you sum up and tell them your experiences versus
21 what they're holding out?

22 MRS. HARTWELL: I'm not sure I understand what --

23 MR. LeCHER: What advice do you have to give to
24 the citizens of Clearwater?

1 MRS. HARTWELL: I --

2 MR. HARTWELL: I would certainly advise anybody
3 that not to believe anything L. Ron Hubbard says. To
4 me, he's nothing but a flat out liar. Of course, he's
5 a big fabricator of all kinds, but he does quite a job,
6 too, of blowing things up way beyond proportion of what
7 they are.

8 It's my belief that he has used psychoanalysis,
9 something discovered by another man that Hubbard got
10 hold of, and he has simply called it auditing. It's
11 nothing but psychoanalysis, but he has called it auditin
12 Now, I say this because I had some psychoanalysis treat-
13 ment myself some thirty years ago. And what little bit
14 of auditing I got into, psychoanalysis is the same thing.
15 And -- the principles of it are identically the same
16 thing. In fact, Ron Hubbard himself gives credit to
17 Freud for a lot of this philosophy.

18 MRS. HARTWELL: I would like to say this: I --
19 my heart bleeds for every youth that's in here, because
20 I know the brainwashing they've had, I know the damage
21 they've had. We've gone through it. And once they
22 step out that door and face reality, they need help.
23 And that's what I feel.

24 MR. CALDERBANK: Dell, did they actually tell you

1 that auditing would cure your sickness and the side
2 effect --

3 MRS. HARTWELL: Between the auditing and a good
4 doctor, which there was supposed to have been one of the
5 top doctors in the United States at base is what they
6 told me.

7 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Berfield, do you have any ques-
8 tions?

9 MR. BERFIELD: Just a couple: I'm going to ask
10 Mr. -- Ernie - because I know better than to ask a
11 woman - what is your age?

12 MR. HARTWELL: My age?

13 MR. BERFIELD: Yes.

14 MR. HARTWELL: Sixty-two.

15 MR. BERFIELD: The reason for that is we've seen
16 a lot of young people come in here, and I was just
17 curious. I will not ask your wife that.

18 I will ask her one question, though. If I could
19 paraphrase, in answer to Mr. Calderbank's question
20 here -- this treatment that they offered you, would you
21 say that that's fraud in your own mind, not --

22 MR. HARTWELL: The treatment they offered Dell?

23 MR. BERFIELD: Yes.

24 MR. HARTWELL: Oh, yes, definitely.

1 I am aware and I agree that certain mental problems
2 can be cured by the process that they use, psychoanalysis,
3 or through psychiatric treatment. We all know that. And
4 they probably do enjoy a certain amount of success with
5 the problems that people have, mentally.

6 But when it comes down to physical problems, I
7 think it's an entirely different story. To give you an
8 example, I have varicose veins very badly in my leg. Of
9 course, I'm more concerned about as far as my dancing
10 career is concerned. But they told me they could cure
11 them. Without going to a doctor, they told me they
12 could cure them. Now, that, of course, I found later
13 is -- nobody's ever heard of anybody curing them --
14 varicose veins through mental treatment.

15 MR. BERFIELD: One other question: I've noticed
16 among the people that have testified here, in the back
17 room, that there seems to be a tremendous camaraderie
18 among those of you that have left Scientology.

19 And I've asked the question of previous ones,
20 you know, of whom you could turn to and, apparently,
21 there is no one that you can go to outside the Church; is
22 that correct?

23 MR. HARTWELL: In regards to what?

24 MR. BERFIELD: In regards to searching for help.

1 MR. HARTWELL: Oh, sure.

2 MRS. GARVEY: While you're in the Church.

3 MR. HARTWELL: Sure. If you have mental problems
4 or physical problems, in our society there are many that
5 you could turn to for help.

6 MR. BERFIELD: No. I mean, the Church itself:
7 fear of the Church, leaving the Church, fear of leaving
8 the Church.

9 MR. HARTWELL: State your question again.

10 MR. BERFIELD: Well, I think I'll go on.

11 And I guess this is more to your wife, but prior
12 to leaving the Church, what retaliation would be taken
13 against the two of you if you left the Church?

14 MR. HARTWELL: Well, that's the thing that they
15 do, of course. They resort -- instill a great amount
16 of fear in you. This happened to us from the day one
17 when we got there until we got out of there. In fact,
18 the fear of it never really left us.

19 There are quite a few full blown psychos in the
20 organization of Scientology, at least I think so. And
21 I think each day you live in fear of some one of these
22 persons taking it on himself to say, "Hey, we must
23 destroy this enemy or that enemy." I mean, they are
24 constantly hammering this type of thing to them anyway.

1 Their enemies must be destroyed.

2 So, the average person doesn't do those things.

3 But we live in fear of it, I do. And, of course, I've
4 heard of it. And if you couldn't quite walk out of your
5 building -- any man who couldn't walk out of a building
6 would be scared to death. There's nothing but fear.

7 Of course, the first time that you -- or the second
8 or third time that you hear of people, say, committing
9 suicide from being in Scientology, the confusion that
10 you're in and the mess that you're in and you know what
11 you're faced with, hey, you are scared.

12 I mean, I was scared to leave there myself, really
13 scared, because I didn't know what would happen to me.
14 I was scared, too, of leaving them there, because I
15 didn't know what would happen to them. They put that
16 fear in me right from the very beginning. I mean, they
17 hammer it in and they maintain it. So, you're scared
18 all the time that you're there; you're scared to blow
19 your nose.

20 One of the biggest things, of course, is the RPF.
21 You're scared of speaking out of turn or you'll go in
22 the RPF. You're scared of everything.

23 One thing that scared me, when I was in the desert,
24 they kept stalling me day after day before they sent me

1 home. In the meantime, about half a dozen guys had left
2 there, what they call blow. They were supposed to have
3 blown. Well, I finally said to myself one day, "Hey,
4 did they blow or are they buried up there on the hill
5 somewhere?" I mean, I'm not saying that any of this
6 happened, but these people just disappeared. And I'm
7 beginning to say to myself, "Why are they going to send
8 me home?" I'm beginning to think they're looking for
9 the right opportunity to bury me on the hill. I mean,
10 they instill that fear in you. Believe me, this is fear.

11 And when they come down making these death threats
12 on us, maybe I'm a chicken of some sort, but I ain't --
13 I'll face anything. I'll face the worse thing that they
14 have. But I was afraid they would bury me, I really was
15 from what they put in us.

16 MR. BERFIELD: One -- just one last question here:
17 There seems to be a thread that runs through here of
18 divide and conquer the family or the family unit.

19 And I've asked this question, and Mr. Calderbank
20 has asked it in another way: If you could give a message
21 to all the people of Clearwater, what would you say to
22 them today?

23 MR. HARTWELL: Stay out of Scientology. Don't have
24 nothing to do with Scientology, believe me.

1 MRS. HARTWELL: The ones that are already in.

2 MR. HARTWELL: Oh. Are you talking about people
3 that are in?

4 MR. BERFIELD: Those that are in and those that are
5 outside, the people of Clearwater.

6 MR. HARTWELL: Well, the people that are in, there's
7 really not much that you can say to them because they're
8 totally brainwashed and sucked into it. The people that
9 are out, hey, stay out.

10 MR. BERFIELD: My last question: Our purpose in
11 this hearing, as a legislative hearing and not as a
12 court, is looking out for the health, safety, and welfare
13 of the people of Clearwater, and that's what we're try-
14 ing to establish here.

15 What can we communicate and do for those people
16 of Clearwater?

17 MR. HARTWELL: Well, I think the people are reading,
18 especially now and have before, enough accounts in the
19 local paper and that of what Scientology is, what they
20 do, and how they operate. The residents of Clearwater,
21 Florida should be able to know what Scientology is by
22 now and be able to keep out of it.

23 MRS. HARTWELL: I have something. I'd like to
24 say something here.

1 The way I look at it is: I feel that what someone
2 in Scientology needs is somebody like the Flynns that
3 has given us support, because trying to find a lawyer
4 and going to a lawyer with the story that we had -- they
5 thought we were crazy. And we just about didn't go
6 public because they thought we were crazy.

7 Now, what needs to be said is they need a depro-
8 gramming program and they can be deprogrammed, which
9 would take away the fear of the ones coming out. And
10 they also need to be -- it's like a concentration camp.
11 They need to be set up before they can be rehabilitated.

12 MR. LeCHER: That's a comment that we shouldn't
13 really get into an area about, deprogramming. We have --
14 we're concerned about the external activities and
15 business activities, and that's something I'm advised
16 that we should not pay too much attention to, although
17 it's certainly very important and --

18 MR. HATCHETT: Well said.

19 MR. LeCHER: -- well said.

20 Mrs. Garvey, do you have any questions?

21 MRS. GARVEY: Thank you, Mr. and Mrs. Hartwell,
22 for coming here. It's been very difficult for you.
23 And coming from -- having children of my own and coming
24 from a large family, I share a little bit, I think, of

1 what you're going through.

2 Just to go back on a couple of things that you
3 said: Mr. Hartwell, you talked about the good reports
4 that you got about Clearwater.

5 Were these from Scientology staff people or were
6 they from recruiters or where -- who in particular did
7 you get this kind of good reports on Scientology, the
8 Florida organization, and Clearwater?

9 MR. HARTWELL: I'll say mostly from her daughter.
10 And then, we got one other person -- oh, yes, several
11 other people, in fact, in Las Vegas that were here. The
12 had one person in particular in the family -- two
13 people --

14 MRS. GARVEY: Vacationing?

15 MR. HARTWELL: No. They were in Scientology.

16 MRS. GARVEY: Scientology.

17 MR. HARTWELL: They were aboard the ship, Apollo,
18 and they landed here and got to know what some of it
19 was like. And everybody spoke well of it. And I can
20 understand why now that I see it myself. I could give
21 up Las Vegas very easily.

22 MRS. GARVEY: When -- did you want --

23 MRS. HARTWELL: The messengers, when they come
24 out, the others -- where --

1 MR. FLYNN: There are messengers from the Commo-
2 dore's Messenger Org., called CMO. They are like the
3 elite of Scientology. We'll get into them at a later
4 point in time.

5 MRS. GARVEY: Okay.

6 They were sent out, then, after you expressed an
7 interest; is that --

8 MRS. HARTWELL: Yes.

9 MRS. GARVEY: Were you taught or told about audit-
10 ing as part of Scientology, if you went and had gone
11 through auditing process?

12 MR. HARTWELL: Yes.

13 MRS. GARVEY: And were you told that this is a
14 scientific method of doing whatever --

15 MRS. HARTWELL: Yes.

16 MRS. GARVEY: -- curing whatever your handle was --

17 MR. HARTWELL: Very definitely --

18 MRS. GARVEY: -- or your problem was?

19 MR. HARTWELL: -- yes.

20 MRS. GARVEY: Were you ever told it would be kept
21 confidential?

22 MR. HARTWELL: Yes.

23 MRS. GARVEY: Okay.

24 MR. HARTWELL: As a matter of fact, they took

1 information out of my confidential file and used it
2 against me.

3 MRS. GARVEY: Obviously, then, you would not have
4 done the auditing if you had known that it was not going
5 to be kept confidential?

6 MR. HARTWELL: Of course not, no.

7 And even part of that stuff -- information was
8 published in the newspapers.

9 MRS. GARVEY: Some of your auditing information
10 was --

11 MR. HARTWELL: Right.

12 MRS. GARVEY: -- in the papers? Okay.

13 Mrs. Hartwell, you have made comment about "written
14 up." What does "written up" mean?

15 MRS. HARTWELL: Everybody spies on everybody. I
16 was even afraid to speak to my daughter because she would
17 write me up.

18 You do --

19 MRS. GARVEY: Is it like a reporting back --

20 MRS. HARTWELL: Right.

21 And they do this to keep everybody in line. They
22 say it's for your -- their own good, because if the
23 person does it -- knows they're caught, they won't do it
24 again. So, you're really supposed to be doing it for

1 their own good. But it is just spying on each other.

2 MRS. GARVEY: Just one -- you made comment about
3 pay. Were you paid there at all while you were --

4 MRS. HARTWELL: We were like whoever it was that
5 testified today. We were promised seventeen-fifty a
6 week, but when we got down there -- and we had to study
7 the different courses, like, the sec check I was telling
8 you about. We were only paid -- because we were on
9 study, our pay was cut to seven-fifty a week.

10 And then, like I said, too, the RPFers and if you
11 were on the lower conditions, where it seemed like I was
12 most of the time, there's no pay.

13 MRS. GARVEY: No pay --

14 MRS. HARTWELL: No pay but more work.

15 MRS. GARVEY: You just casually mentioned sec
16 checks, security checks. What -- did you both go through
17 security checks?

18 MRS. HARTWELL: Very vividly, when we got down
19 there. And that was, I think, the main purpose -- now,
20 I can see the main purpose is to find out if there's
21 anything in -- about your background that they can use.

22 MRS. GARVEY: Is that -- is that a check or a
23 question and answer thing of about a hundred, a hundred
24 and fifty questions?

1 MRS. HARTWELL: Mm-mm.

2 MRS. GARVEY: They ask --

3 MRS. HARTWELL: Right.

4 MRS. GARVEY: -- everything that they want to know
5 that you wouldn't want to tell them otherwise?

6 MRS. HARTWELL: Right.

7 MRS. GARVEY: Okay.

8 We saw that earlier, Mr. Flynn?

9 MR. FLYNN: That's Exhibit 6, for the record.

10 MRS. GARVEY: Okay.

11 Okay, that's it.

12 MR. LeCHER: Is that it, Mrs. Garvey?

13 MRS. GARVEY: Yes.

14 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Hatchett, do you have any ques-
15 tions?

16 MR. HATCHETT: No, Mr. Mayor.

17 I'm happy that you came. My heart bled as I
18 listened.

19 I don't need to ask any questions.

20 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

21 Mr. Shoemaker.

22 MR. SHOEMAKER: Mr. and Mrs. Hartwell, something
23 that -- I don't know whether you can give us an answer
24 or not.

1 Apparently, from what we have heard and what we
2 understand, being close to L. Ron Hubbard, from a Scien-
3 tologist's point of view, would be almost like going to
4 heaven. That would be the greatest thing that could
5 happen.

6 MRS. HARTWELL: Oh, yes, very much so.

7 MR. SHOEMAKER: And the fact that they came and
8 recruited you, when you were not directly related to
9 Scientology, and brought you in immediately to where he
10 was located -- did you ever understand why they selected
11 you to do this?

12 MRS. HARTWELL: No.

13 We kept asking ourselves, "Why; Why us," you know.
14 And then, I kept telling Ernie -- I says, "Well, every-
15 body on the planet, or, you know, in Scientology, would
16 give their right arm to be here." I says, "Why don't we
17 feel that way? What is there? What's here?"

18 And that's the way it was.

19 MR. HARTWELL: I think I could add just -- go
20 ahead.

21 MR. SHOEMAKER: No, sir, please go ahead.

22 MR. HARTWELL: I think I could add something more
23 to that.

24 They realized - or we heard indirectly - they had

1 made a mistake in bringing us there. That was one of
2 the reasons why the recruiters that were sent down --
3 from wherever it was that came down to take us in made a
4 gross mistake by taking us in because we were not indoc-
5 trinated into the religion. So --

6 MR. SHOEMAKER: And that's why they were put in
7 the RPF?

8 MR. HARTWELL: That's one of the reasons, I guess,
9 along with everything else. They stayed in -- their
10 punishment, in other words, lasted as long as I was there
11 and, I think, it lasted as long as she was there or even
12 longer.

13 MRS. GARVEY: But they were there when --

14 MR. HARTWELL: Yeah. They had -- they put them
15 in there for taking us there because we were not in the
16 religion.

17 MR. LeCHER: All right.

18 One quickie: What kind of movies was L. Ron making?
19 You made movies with him in the desert. Were they
20 epics, or --

21 MRS. HARTWELL: Well, it was -- one was on the
22 E-Meter. And this was quite interesting, too, because
23 everybody -- they had what they called the pinch test.

24 MR. LeCHER: Pinch?

1 MRS. HARTWELL: Yes.

2 You pinch and the Meter's supposed to read and
3 then, you're supposed to say, "Feel that pinch," and the
4 Meter's supposed to read again. And you know, everybody
5 on that base was pinched one to ten times before we
6 finally got to pass the first reading.

7 MRS. GARVEY: No feelings left.

8 MR. HARTWELL: I think one of the things that made
9 me realize what a hopeless, helpless operation it was is
10 that I went into the editing room - that was going to be
11 my first job - and when I first got in there, I was shown
12 amongst other things, a file cabinet of film that they
13 had. Now, they had a two-door cabinet that was probably
14 about that wide and, I guess, seven feet tall. And it
15 was almost full with film, you know, the thirty-five
16 millimeter regular movie-size film. All the trays were
17 marked "No good."

18 Now, this is what made me realize the insanity of
19 L. Ron Hubbard and what he was trying to do. He was the
20 one that was directing the movies; he was the one that
21 was writing the scripts for them; and he was the one
22 that was producing them. Yet, there was --

23 MR. LeCHER: Was he acting in them, too?

24 MR. HARTWELL: No.

1 MRS. HARTWELL: Yes.

2 MR. HARTWELL: At least, not that I know of.

3 MR. LeCHER: He was the star, too?

4 MRS. HARTWELL: He was the star.

5 MR. HARTWELL: But that's what made me realize it.

6 The whole place was nothing but in a high state of con-
7 fusion. Each department, instead of working with each
8 other, fought each other, and everything was a terrible
9 confused mess. But, hey, there's the man that was
10 running it.

11 MRS. HARTWELL: One thing I'd like to add is we
12 were doing a scene where they were bombing the FBI
13 office and -- I mean, I was in makeup, and we had so
14 much blood on those actors, which was made out of Karo
15 Syrup and food coloring. And we couldn't get enough on
16 them to suit Hubbard. We had guys' legs off, there were
17 hands off, arms -- I mean, it was a mess from the word
18 go.

19 We had so much blood on those actors that they had
20 to take their clothes and all and soak in the shower
21 before they could undress. This is what Hubbard wanted.

22 MRS. GARVEY: This doesn't necessarily relate to
23 the Clearwater operation, but I think it relates to the
24 base that we're talking about.

1 MR. SHOEMAKER: Oh, one other question, if I might
2 ask: Was there any question in your mind that the things
3 you described - not specific detail, but the things you
4 described - is there any question in your mind that Mr.
5 Hubbard did not know what was going on?

6 MRS. HARTWELL: Well, a lot of things was kept from
7 Hubbard, like, the mail was supposed to -- everybody
8 writes to Hubbard and he answers everybody. He doesn't
9 see a letter.

10 But anything, such as our case, that was going on
11 on the base was right from Hubbard. There's no doubt.
12 There -- the telexes came. I thought -- the telex room
13 was really heavily guarded. But I did see telexes from
14 England, California, and Clearwater.

15 MR. SHOEMAKER: Yes, ma'am.

16 The conditions which the people were living in there
17 and the RPF and all of that, that -- he certainly knew
18 about that?

19 MRS. HARTWELL: He knew it and thoroughly enjoyed
20 it.

21 MR. LeCHER: Thank you.

22 I would just like to say one final comment: We
23 thank you very much for being good witnesses and for
24 being -- you've got a very sad story to tell, and I don't

1 know how you got it out, but you did it very well. And
2 we appreciate your coming.

3 MR. FLYNN: As a point of information, the movie
4 that Mrs. Hartwell referred to, whatever it's worth, is
5 a movie that was made during the period that the criminal
6 cases in Washington, D.C. were taking place. And those
7 movies were shown around the United States.

8 And they, basically, showed that psychiatrists,
9 the FBI, and the AMA were criminal organizations, as
10 shown in the movie. And some of the blood scenes that
11 were described were seen to have supposedly been perpe-
12 trated by the FBI and the AMA. And those movies are
13 shown around the United States to certain Scientology
14 members.

15 I would now like to introduce a document and --
16 also, for the record, as Mr. Hartwell testified, after
17 all of this occurred, a lawsuit was brought against him
18 by the Church. And I will leave the reasons for the
19 bringing of the lawsuit to your -- whatever inferences
20 you may draw after you hear the rest of the testimony.

21 And I would point out the Fair Game Doctrine that
22 was on the easel - and we'll put back up - that said
23 earlier that the Fair Game Doctrine says, "Lie, Cheat,
24 Sue, or Destroy."

1 And we're now going to introduce an exhibit involv-
2 ing the alleged cancellation of the Fair Game Doctrine,
3 as held out by the Church.

4 Can we have the lights turned off, please?

5 Thank you.

6 You'll note that the HCO policy letter of 21 October
7 1968, from the Hubbard Communications Office, says,
8 "Cancellation of Fair Game." The Fair Game Doctrine over
9 on the easel is dated 18 October 1967. The portion
10 under "Enemy" that I referred to a minute ago says that
11 an Enemy may be tricked, sued, lied to, or destroyed, as
12 well as deprived of his property, et cetera.

13 This document says, "Cancellation of Fair Game.
14 The practice of declaring people Fair Game will cease.
15 Fair Game may not appear on any Ethics Order. It causes
16 bad public relations. This PL" - policy letter - "does
17 not cancel any policy on the treatment or handling of
18 an SP."

19 MRS. GARVEY: Nicely written.

20 MR. CALDERBANK: But, Mr. Flynn, doesn't it say
21 SP Order over there, and then it says you can lie, sue
22 trick, cheat?

23 MR. FLYNN: That's correct; that's the policy.

24 MR. CALDERBANK: So --

1 MR. FLYNN: And this --

2 MR. CALDERBANK: -- this policy letter did not
3 cancel anything?

4 MR. FLYNN: Did not -- that's precisely correct.

5 As a matter of fact, see, what was occurring at
6 that time was, when they issued Ethics Orders, they put
7 on the Ethics Order that the person is subject to Fair
8 Game. Well, for a period of time, because they were
9 having problems in England and Australia and other coun-
10 tries, they took that off Ethics Orders, but they con-
11 tinued to implement the policy.

12 And as you've seen from the exhibit we've already
13 introduced into evidence, which is Exhibit No. 4, on
14 8 June 1979 in this country, they subjected to a person
15 with a Fair Game Declaration, as you have seen. And you
16 just heard the Hartwells' testimony.

17 (A copy of HCO policy letter, dated
18 October 21, 1968, "Cancellation of
19 Fair Game," was marked as Exhibit
20 No. 40, as of this date.)

21 MR. FLYNN: The next witness -- that's the prior
22 Exhibit No. 4 and, if you move it up, you will read that
23 that person is subjected to the Fair Game Doctrine down
24 at the bottom of the last paragraph. And if you move it
back down, you'll see the date on it: 8 June 1979.

1 The next witness is named George Meister.

2 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Meister, would be sworn in,
3 please, by Miss Goudeau?

4
5 GEORGE MEISTER, a witness herein,
6 having first been duly sworn by a Clerk for the City of
7 Clearwater, was examined and testified as follows:

8 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Meister, I must ask you the same
9 set of five questions I ask every witness.

10 Are you appearing today to testify under oath
11 voluntarily?

12 MR. MEISTER: Yes.

13 MR. LeCHER: Have you been paid by anyone for your
14 testimony, other than the expenses to come to Clearwater?

15 MR. MEISTER: No, sir.

16 MR. LeCHER: Do you have a lawsuit against the
17 Church of Scientology?

18 MR. MEISTER: No.

19 MR. LeCHER: Does the Scientology -- the Church of
20 Scientology have a lawsuit against you?

21 MR. MEISTER: No.

22 MR. LeCHER: Has anyone suggested to you that you
23 should state anything but the truth or has anyone
24 suggested that you change your testimony for any reason?

1 MR. MEISTER: No.

2 MR. LeCHER: Thank you.

3 MR. MEISTER: My name is George Meister. I'm here,
4 not because I've ever been a member of the Church of
5 Scientology or ever will be, but I'm here in behalf of
6 my daughter, Susan. And I'd like to have the camera get
7 a shot of this picture, possibly. This is a picture of
8 my daughter, and that's all I have.

9 Susan died aboard the ship, Apollo, June 25th,
10 1971, with a bullet in the middle of her forehead. Well,
11 I first received news of this death -- and we live in
12 Greeley, Colorado, and my business took me over a four-
13 state area. I was in Salt Lake City at the time. I
14 received a telephone call from my daughter, the youngest
15 daughter; I had two daughters. My youngest daughter,
16 Robin, called me and said that "Dad, Susan's dead." I
17 said, "What?" She said, "Yeah, Susan's dead."

18 She said, "Reverend Maren is here, and he's going
19 to wait until you come home to acquaint you with the
20 facts of her death." I said, "Who is Reverend Maren?"
21 She said, "He's a minister from the Church of Scien-
22 tology." So, I don't know, everything became a blur; I
23 couldn't think very straight, and I was in shock.

24 Well, I have a cousin in Scottsbluff, Nebraska, who

1 was a practicing attorney down there. I called him and
2 I said, "I need help. I'm going to fly into Denver and,
3 when I get into Denver, I'd like to have you meet me
4 there because they have this man from the Church of
5 Scientology there who's going to tell us about Susan's
6 death." And he said, "Susan's what?" I said, "My
7 daughter's dead." He said, "I'll be there." So, he was.

8 So, we went to Greeley and discussed the thing
9 with my wife and my daughter, then, proceeded to meet
10 with Reverend Maren. He informed us that Susan had
11 died aboard the yacht, Apollo, by a self-inflicted gun-
12 shot wound. He said, "We have a report here that the
13 ship put out," and it was worded that Susan had committed
14 suicide.

15 But we talked with the Reverend Maren quite some
16 time and, of course, my cousin, being an attorney, was --
17 had some inquiring questions, like: "Were there any
18 witnesses to this?" He couldn't come up with any wit-
19 nesses or anyone who had seen this happen. "What were
20 the circumstances?" "Well, Susan died aboard the ship in
21 the harbor of Safi, in Morocco, North Africa."

22 So, on the fact sheet that they put out that he gave
23 me, it said: "Miss Susan Meister was found dead from a
24 gunshot wound in her forehead at approximately seven-

1 thirty-five p.m., on Friday, June 25th, 1971. The door
2 was locked and admittance to the cabin was only gained
3 after the key had been obtained from the berthing
4 steward. She was lying fully clothed on a bunk in the
5 cabin; there was no pulse.

6 "The police authorities were immediately notified
7 and the body was taken ashore to the police mortuary for
8 an autopsy as required in such circumstances. On the
9 floor of the cabin, the police found a suicide note which
10 they took as evidence.

11 "The captain had all persons restricted to the
12 vessel, except for senior officers assisting the police
13 in their investigation, until such time as the autopsy
14 was completed and the police investigation completed.

15 "The gun used was a .22 caliber target revolver
16 belonging to another person on board. Susan knew that
17 he had such a gun, as she had watched him clean,
18 reassemble, and replace it in a drawer in his cabin.
19 The gun was found clasped in her hands.

20 "On the day of her death, Susan was seen on board
21 by many people and, particularly, up until two-thirty
22 p.m. She appeared to be quite happy and not in the least
23 distressed or disturbed.

24 "As her job entailed the delivery of communications

1 to all parts of the vessel, this explains why so many
2 saw her in the time period mentioned. However, in the
3 afternoon, she was found missing at her work as clerical
4 assistant and a crew member looked for her and found her
5 alone in the cabin where she later committed suicide.
6 This was three p.m. and he asked her to come back to
7 work, which she did. She was seen by her senior at
8 four p.m. However, she didn't make her usual communica-
9 tion deliveries at five p.m., nor did she appear for
10 dinner at six p.m.

11 "Susan arrived on board February 19th, 1971 and,
12 although the police took the suicide note as evidence,
13 one of the ship's officers was asked to read it to them.
14 He stated that in it that Susan mentioned that she wanted
15 her possessions to be sent to her parents, especially,
16 her books and she was sorry for any mess caused anyone."

17 Well, basically, this is what happened. And as
18 soon as possible, taking the time that it took to get
19 passports and so forth, I made up my mind that I was
20 going to Morocco to find out what happened.

21 Morocco wasn't a new place to me. I landed there
22 in 1942 with the U.S. Army; I was a combat engineer. And
23 I knew what a hole that country was.

24 But -- oh, it was about two weeks later, maybe a

1 little longer, that I was able to leave. And I stopped
2 off in Washington, D.C. because I had a feeling that
3 going over there to that country - and with what little
4 I could learn about these people - that I wanted all the
5 protection that I could get. I stopped at the office of
6 Gordon Allen, who was the United States Senator from
7 Colorado in Washington, D.C., and Gordon Allen was
8 extremely helpful. Peter Domenic was also another one of
9 our U.S. Senators, and he was helpful.

10 So, between the two of them, they provided me with
11 letters and they provided me with the information that
12 I needed on who to see when I got there to Morocco.

13 After that, I left the States and went to Morocco,
14 landing in Casablanca. It was real foggy there, I remem-
15 ber that. Coming in on Pan Am's - one of those old
16 Boeing 707s - we had to make three passes at the airport
17 before we could find a hole through the fog and get down
18 and find the field. Well, this is three o'clock in the
19 morning.

20 So, anyway, I went over to the terminal with the
21 rest of the passengers. I was looking around for the
22 vice counsel that I was told was going to meet me.
23 Instead of that, my name came over the loudspeaker in the
24 airport. I walked up to this desk and there was a man and

1 a woman standing there to meet me. The man's name was
2 Peter Warren, and he introduced himself, and he introduced
3 the woman as Joanie from the ship, Apollo; they were
4 from the Church of Scientology. And they were to escort
5 me.

6 I said, "Well, where is the vice counsel? Where's
7 this government official that I wanted to meet?" He
8 said, "Oh, he had a previous engagement and he asked if
9 we'd look after you." Okay.

10 So, it was some twenty miles into Casablanca. We
11 went into the Mar Harbor Hotel and I was given a room in
12 the -- in this hotel. I was tired, so I went to sleep.
13 And about ten o'clock the next morning, I got a call from
14 this -- from the vice counsel. And he came over to the
15 hotel room and then we started going over the facts of
16 Susan's death, that it was by gunshot wound and so forth.

17 And he became alarmed. The man had had some
18 previous intelligence experience. He said, "I don't
19 like this at all." And we were to go to Safi, which was
20 about a hundred miles south of there.

21 So, these people, the Scientologists, Warren and
22 Joanie, were always there. I could never move without
23 them being right by my side. The following day, the
24 four of us took a car and drove to Safi, and I had a

1 camera with me and I had some thirty-five rolls of film.
2 I thought that what I'd like to do, I'd like to photo-
3 graph everything and get as much as I could on film.

4 So, we went down -- drove down to Safi. And when
5 we got there -- Jack Galbraith was the vice counsel's
6 name, and he suggested we go to the -- first, we go to
7 the local police department to see what we could find out
8 about it. We went to the police department and the man
9 who was in charge of the police was very helpful. The
10 first thing he had done was show me a photograph of Susan
11 lying on the bunk with this hole in her head and blood
12 running out the corners of her mouth. It wasn't a very
13 pleasant sight. And all the reports that they showed of
14 this death were all written in French. Of course, I
15 couldn't under -- I couldn't read French and neither did
16 Jack Galbraith. So, it was -- that wasn't too effective.

17 Well, I asked -- then, they showed us the box. I
18 wanted to see the gun that she supposedly shot herself
19 with, and they showed us a box. It was just a box, which
20 didn't tell me much of anything.

21 But in this picture where Susan lay dead, they
22 said, "This is the way we found her; her body was undis-
23 turbed by anybody until the French police came or the
24 Moroccan police and took charge." She was lying there

1 with a bullet hole in her head. Her arms were crossed
2 on her chest, and in the middle of her breasts on her
3 arms -- or underneath her arms was this .22 caliber,
4 long-barrelled revolver. How could anybody shoot them-
5 selves in the head and then put the gun on their breast,
6 being between two clasped hands -- how do you do that?
7 How can you shoot yourself in the middle of the head
8 with a long-barrelled revolver, holding it out like this?
9 I think you'd have to use two hands and then you might
10 miss.

11 But the other thing is, in all the suicides that
12 I know anything about, I find it very rare that a woman
13 commits suicide by gunshell. It could be pills or some-
14 thing of that nature, but hardly ever a gun.

15 But then, we went next to a so-called hospital
16 where this autopsy was performed and we ran into the
17 same situation over there.

18 I asked the police, before I left, for these
19 reports. They said, "No, you can't have it." "Well,
20 what about the picture?" "No, can't have it." "How
21 about a copy of the picture?" "No, can't have it."

22 Well, after going over to the -- to this morgue --
23 going over to this hospital -- and it was extremely
24 dirty. Of course, I don't know -- you know, most people

1 feel like things in foreign countries are going to be
2 the same as they are in this country. They're not.
3 A place like Morocco is -- it's a monarchy. And of
4 course, the King of Morocco - as it is today - he runs
5 that country totally, and whatever he says is the law. It
6 carries all the way down from the top to the lowest
7 citizen. If he wants somebody dead, they're dead; it's
8 that simple.

9 And of course, anyone who's a citizen of this
10 country -- when you get into a problem in any of those
11 foreign countries, even though they are like Morocco,
12 you're subject to the laws of that country. You're --
13 because of the fact that you're a United States citizen
14 doesn't have anything to do with it.

15 But then, the next place we went to was the hospi-
16 tal, and the doctor in charge was wearing something
17 that looked like a long, white gown that was dirty and
18 bloodstained. It looked like he'd worn it for maybe a
19 week. And he had patients there.

20 He showed us into this operating room and, honestly,
21 I've seen butcher shops that look better. This is where
22 the autopsy was done. I had a man with me from the
23 Church of Scientology, Peter Warren, and he said, "We
24 ordered the autopsy." He said, "We had her brain

1 removed; we had all of her intestines removed." I said,
2 "Why?" He said, "We were looking for drugs. We suspected
3 her of using drugs."

4 Well, I said, "Where's her body? I was told, before
5 I came over, by you people that her body would be in a
6 refrigerated morgue and that I would be able to identify
7 her." That's why I went there. I went there to identify
8 my daughter's body because I didn't believe she was dead.
9 I wanted to see her body. And he said, "It isn't here."
10 This is the doctor at the hospital. He said, "I don't
11 know where it is."

12 So, we went to another place, this records house.
13 And we couldn't -- didn't find out anything there. And
14 we finally wound up in the Office of the Pasha. Well,
15 the Pasha is the same as a mayor of a city. Well, the
16 Pasha was a very small, well-dressed individual, with a
17 little moustache, very arrogant little guy. He took in
18 the whole case -- I'm not -- no reflection, your Honor.

19 But anyway, he wound up kind of -- in view of every-
20 thing that had happened, he said that "All these records
21 are going to be transferred to Marrakech," which was the
22 provincial capital some hundred and fifty miles away. He
23 said, "If you want to pursue this matter any farther,
24 you'll have to engage a Moroccan attorney, you'll have to

1 wait for a court date, and you'll have to be here." "How
2 long is that going to take?" "Well," he said, "it could
3 be a month, it could be six months." Well, I knew there
4 was nothing -- you know, there wasn't anything further
5 to do.

6 And then, it was getting pretty well along in the
7 day, so we decided, "Well, we better stay in Safi that
8 night because going back to Casablanca was about a hundred
9 miles." And the roads over there are full of wandering
10 people. They have no home; they just wander. Wherever
11 they happen to be, that's where they stay. You know,
12 the country's warm; usually, the weather's not too bad.
13 So, we said, "Well, better not to hit one of those guys
14 or get into any kind of trouble." If you're driving on
15 the road and you happen to run into one of those Morrocan,
16 you know, wanderers -- I suppose, if the Pasha ran over
17 one of them, nothing would be said; it would be okay.
18 But if I ran over one of them, I think I'd be in jail
19 forever. So, we decided against that.

20 There's a hotel in Safi called the Metropole
21 Hotel, so we decided we'd stay there that night. We went
22 over there -- and you don't do anything in Morroco with-
23 out a passport. You have to have a passport to register
24 in a hotel, to get a train, to do anything you want to.

1 And we went over and registered in the hotel, using our
2 passports. And Jack Galbraith said, "Well, I told my
3 wife in Casablanca," he said, "that I was going to be
4 back tonight." He said, "In this country, you make sure
5 you tell people where you're at."

6 So, he couldn't get through to his wife. They don't
7 have much of a telephone system there. It runs and then
8 it doesn't run. So, he tried to call his wife and he
9 couldn't get through to her. So, he finally called
10 this -- the office of the counsel and he got through
11 there, and he asked if they wouldn't mind telling his
12 wife that he was going to stay over and where he was.
13 She got the message right away. And it was about an hour
14 later - I guess it must have been about ten o'clock at
15 night - this hotel -- she called down there to the hotel
16 and wanted to talk to him and find out where he was and
17 how long he was going to be gone. And the desk clerk
18 that answered the call said, "We never even heard of that
19 man. We never heard of George Meister." We were
20 registered there.

21 We later found out that Lafayette Ronald Hubbard
22 had the top floor at that hotel. This was a practice
23 that he -- quite -- oh, it was usual with him at all
24 these places where -- this ship, Apollo, was a rather

1 small ship. I remember the thing I saw when I was over-
2 seas, the troop transport. And when I was over in North
3 Africa in the early forties during World War II, they
4 were using that thing for a troop transport. It was
5 what we considered a small ship.

6 But what Hubbard would do is he'd be on board that
7 ship when it was under way and then, when they'd get into
8 these towns, he'd take over, maybe, the top floor of the
9 hotel and he'd stay there with all his messengers, you
10 know, his girls that -- with the ashtrays and so forth
11 that Mrs. Hartwell described to you. That really did
12 happen. So -- and the people on board the ship would
13 be -- it was a very confining thing, very, very confining.

14 Yeah, I think I better start -- how did Susan get
15 into Scientology, okay? This happened when she was --
16 Susan was twenty-two years old and she had gone to school
17 for quite some time. And she decided that she was going
18 to San Francisco from Colorado. So, she said she wanted
19 to go out there and work. Fine. So, she and another --
20 about four of them went out there.

21 She got a job. She had a couple of jobs, as a
22 matter of fact. And one job that she had was with
23 Grolier Publishing Company, selling magazine subscriptions
24 by telephone. And that's where she met a couple of

1 people. They were very interesting and they were, you
2 know, learning to sell by telephone, and these people
3 were Scientologists. They were apparently learning
4 Grolier Publishing Company's techniques on how to sell
5 by telephone.

6 But she went over to this Scientology org., I
7 suppose is what it was, on Mason Street in San Francisco,
8 and she was very impressed at her reception. At the
9 reception, everyone was very neat, and the girl that was
10 on the desk was very orderly. And she was treated very
11 well. Scientology was really presented to her first
12 class. She was impressed; she was really impressed with
13 this. So, she just kept going back.

14 And she would -- she got this free personality
15 test. She liked that. We got a letter from her and --
16 stating that she was in this Scientology and she thought
17 it was something that was real good, and she was
18 interested in it. So, this was in the fall of 1970.

19 And then, she wanted to go to Los Angeles. She
20 said, "In order to pursue this further, in order to become
21 more advanced in this thing, it's necessary that I go to
22 Los Angeles."

23 She came home for Christmas in 1970. Then, she
24 went back to San Francisco and -- let's see, she left

1 there in the latter part of January; she went to San
2 Francisco. That was the last time I ever saw her alive.
3 She went to San Francisco -- or to Los Angeles.

4 Then, we found out later that she went from Los
5 Angeles -- she didn't stay there very long. But she went
6 from there to New York to Lisbon, Portugal, and from
7 Portugal she went to Casablanca. And that's where she
8 caught the ship.

9 MR. FLYNN: I'd like to put a couple of letters on
10 the overhead projector.

11 And for the record, the ship was then the Flag
12 Land Base. And the Flag Land Base for the Church of
13 Scientology now is Clearwater --

14 MR. LeCHER: Florida.

15 MR. FLYNN: -- Florida.

16 MRS. GARVEY: Flag Base not Flag Land Base.

17 MR. LeCHER: So, then, we would have to assume that
18 the same mentality that ran the ship is running this ship
19 here.

20 MR. FLYNN: They're -- they're -- with regard to
21 the organizational policy that concerns the Commissioners,
22 as concerns the Church of Scientology, is one of the
23 reasons for this testimony. We will -- after we create
24 the factual record, from a legal perspective that will

1 be arrived at.

2 The policies that run the Church of Scientology,
3 as I believe the evidence will eventually show and is
4 beginning to show, are uniform throughout the world,
5 and those policies are followed everywhere.

6 MR. CALDERBANK: Counsel, I hate to ask this but:
7 Does Mr. Meister know about the specific policy, R 245?

8 MR. MEISTER: Yeah, I'll get to that.

9 MR. FLYNN: I believe he is aware of R 245.

10 The next exhibit is a letter, dated 8/5/71 from
11 Flag, and it's addressed to Susan's mother in Greeley,
12 Colorado. And it reads: "Do you recall talking to me
13 about World War II" --

14 MR. GREENE: Three.

15 MR. FLYNN: -- or "World War III and where it would
16 start if it were to start? Father and most everyone
17 else maintained that it would start in either China or
18 Russia versus U.S. And you said, 'Oh, no, it would
19 originate in Germany, that the Nazis hadn't given up
20 yet.'

21 "Well, babe, you were right. There is a new Nazi
22 resurgence taking place in Germany. So, now it's a race
23 between the good guys in the white hats, Scientologists,
24 and the Leipzig death camps," parentheses, "(Nazis), the

1 bad guys in the black hats. We'll win, of course, but
2 the game is exciting. Truth is stranger than fiction.
3 As Alice in Wonderland says, 'Things get curiouiser and
4 curiouiser.' Get into Scientology now. It's fantastic.

5 "Love, Susan."

6 (A copy of a letter, dated 8/5/71
7 was marked as Exhibit No. 41, as of
8 this date.)

9 MR. BERFIELD: Counsel, can her father identify
10 that as being her writing?

11 MR. MEISTER: Definitely.

12 MR. BERFIELD: That is her --

13 MR. MEISTER: There's no doubt about it.

14 MR. FLYNN: Was that Exhibit 41?

15 THE CLERK: Yes.

16 MR. MEISTER: I might add one thing. Susan's
17 penmanship -- usually, she wrote -- that was her style
18 of writing. But usually, her lettering was spaced very
19 well.

20 If you notice the letter here, the writing is big
21 and small; it runs together. And this is an indication
22 to me that something just wasn't right with her.

23 MR. FLYNN: Okay.

24 And the next exhibit is a letter, dated 12/8/71,
from Flag, and it's addressed to "Dear Family" in Greeley,

1 Colorado. You will note, I believe, the last letter was
2 dated in August, some four or five months before that.

3 And it says: "Dear Family, I just had a session,
4 an auditing session. I feel great, great, great and
5 my life is expanding, expanding and is all Scientology.
6 Hurry up, hurry, hurry. Be a friend to yourselves, get
7 into this stuff now.

8 "It's more precious than gold. It's the best thing
9 that's ever, ever, ever, ever come along.

10 "Love, Susan."

11 (A copy of a letter, dated 12/5/71,
12 from Susan Meister was marked as
Exhibit No. 42, as of this date.)

13 MRS. GARVEY: She was found dead, when?

14 MR. CALDERBANK: June 25th, '71.

15 MR. LeCHER: June 25th.

16 MR. CALDERBANK: One of the letters I saw had a
17 12/5/71 date on it. Could that be, instead, 5/12/71,
18 June 12th, 1971, a few days before she was --

19 MR. MEISTER: What she was doing then was going
20 into a military-type date. Her first letter, before she
21 got in -- onto this ship and so forth -- things suddenly
22 started to take on a military character, like, it would
23 be 15 June '71

24 MR. CALDERBANK: So, in other words, that letter

1 that you saw on the screen was two weeks before her
2 reported death day?

3 MR. MEISTER: This last one?

4 MR. CALDERBANK: Yes.

5 MR. MEISTER: No. This last one here was dated --
6 that's April -- no. The one in which she's really not
7 coherent, in my judgment, was May the 12th, 1971. She
8 has it "12/5/71," which, actually, would be May the 12th.

9 MR. FLYNN: I think I read 12/8.

10 MR. MEISTER: Yeah.

11 But everything starts to take on the military
12 character..

13 So, then she comes -- okay, then, what happens,
14 when the Maren -- the Reverend Maren came to our home
15 in Greeley, they left so many unanswered questions --
16 the only thing he left with us was his address in Los
17 Angeles; that's the headquarters of the Church of
18 Scientology.

19 And shortly after that, I received a letter, signed
20 by a Reverend Thomas from the Church of Scientology,
21 and they were -- he says here, "First, may I express my
22 sincere condolences for your bereavement in what must
23 be a shocking and tragic loss."

24 I had expressed to Arthur Maren my desire that my

1 daughter's body be returned to the United States. Under
2 no condition would I allow my daughter to be buried on
3 foreign soil and, especially, in Morocco.

4 So, this being a real demand of mine -- then, I
5 get this letter, when he gets back, this is the 7th of
6 July 1971: "May I first express my deep and sincere
7 condolences for your bereavement in what must be a
8 shocking and tragic loss. For myself as well as the
9 Church, may I express the hope that the spirit of your
10 daughter may yet find the tranquility that it has so
11 restlessly sought.

12 "The purpose of Reverend Maren's visit was an
13 expression of the solicitude that any Church might feel
14 on the loss of a parishioner. Reverend Maren acted as
15 an emissary for the Church and, at the request of Captain
16 Starkey, was entrusted with easing the distress of you
17 and your family of what might otherwise have been a
18 belated and, perhaps, abruptly impersonal notification
19 by officialdom.

20 "As your request to Reverend Maren for additional
21 information, I fully understand your concern. Official
22 details relative to the tragedy, I'm sure, will be con-
23 tained in the duly recorded testimonies supplied in the
24 inquest, as well as the coroner's report, and the death

1 certificate, which I am informed is presently en route
2 to you. These documents will undoubtedly contain the
3 detailed information which you, as a relative of the
4 deceased, should expect to receive regarding the circum-
5 stances of the death.

6 "I'm sure that you understand that the ship's
7 company, an independent Panamanian agency, is under
8 no obligation to the Church of Scientology of California
9 to provide information that it finds deemed to go beyond
10 the scope of a reasonable inquiry by bereaved parents.

11 "In addition to the details Reverend Maren has
12 already communicated to you, further details as to the
13 Church activity and doctrine can be found in the litera-
14 ture in the Book of Ceremonies, which is included." They
15 sent me a copy of the Book of Ceremonies.

16 "As to the shipping of the remains, the ship's
17 captain has indicated that should you wish a local,
18 Christian burial with monument, such will be arranged
19 at a Christian cemetery in Morocco at company expense.
20 Now, if the remains are to be shipped to the United
21 States, which I understand is your desire, the company
22 regrettably is not in a position to bear the considerable
23 costs involved. And please call me further should you
24 have any need for the service of the good office of the

1 Church." And this is signed by Reverend Robert Thomas.

2 MR. LeCHER: Did you ever get the body back?

3 MR. MEISTER: Yes, I did, your Honor. And how I
4 did -- going to Morocco and after this battle is then
5 when the real war started. It was a tug of war between
6 me and the Church of Scientology.

7 Then, several little harrassing things started to
8 happen, like, letters coming, oh --

9 MR. LeCHER: Was a regular autopsy ever performed
10 on your daughter that you could trust?

11 MR. MEISTER: No, sir, it wasn't.

12 The reason it --

13 MR. LeCHER: Did it remain in Morocco under orders
14 to do the autopsy?

15 MR. MEISTER: Yeah, that was the autopsy. Yes.
16 But there was never --

17 MR. LeCHER: Official --

18 MR. MEISTER: -- an official order signed by a
19 doctor or a pathologist or anything like that, nothing.

20 MR. LeCHER: Is that standard procedure in
21 Morocco?

22 MR. MEISTER: There is no procedure in Morocco.

23 And the Death Certificate -- this is it, which is
24 actually a worthless document. It shows no sign -- no

1 cause of death.

2 And what you have to do is just go on their word.
3 But really, what happened -- the only thing that we could
4 go by of any explanation came in the letters from the
5 Church of Scientology; we never did receive anything from
6 the Moroccan government.

7 I was told, again, that if I intended to pursue it,
8 I would have to engage a Moroccan attorney and go to
9 Marrakech and get the facts, which, nothing would have
10 happened.

11 But anyway, what happened is this tug of war between
12 me and the Church of Scientology and the Moroccan govern-
13 ment in getting Susan's body back was really quite a
14 runaround for the Christian burial that I thought it
15 deserved.

16 And then, I was -- I didn't have any idea what
17 happened to her body. But I later learned that she had
18 been buried in a Moroccan cemetery in Casablanca in a
19 burlap sack. I became so insistent on this, they finally
20 dug up her body and a local mortician in Casablanca --
21 they -- what they have to do is -- the procedure they
22 have to do in shipping bodies out of Morocco and into
23 the United States - I think those procedures are more of
24 an advantage by the United States government - they have to

1 put -- place the body in an airtight container. In this
2 case it was a tin container and it was soldered shut,
3 and then they put it in a wooden coffin after that. And
4 in that condition it was transported to the United
5 States.

6 Okay. Ten days prior to this, we knew that Susan's
7 body was coming. There comes a letter to the Well County
8 Health Department, Greeley, Colorado: "Sirs, Recently
9 this reporter had disclosed to him some rather alarming
10 news. I once had to cover a story in a small town such
11 as Greeley, which had a rather primitive but nevertheless
12 adequate health facilities. They chose to ignore a
13 cholera warning from the World Health Organization and,
14 believe me, the results are not pleasant.

15 "There has been a cholera epidemic in Morocco, and
16 everyone leaving the country is required to have a
17 cholera shot before leaving, and there is a public health
18 campaign to get all citizens vaccinated. However, there
19 is a shortage of vaccine. There have been a recorded
20 two to three hundred deaths. And it's been brought to
21 my attention that the daughter of one, George Meister,
22 died in Morocco, either by accident or from cholera,
23 probably the latter. Meister either already has or is
24 in the process of bringing back the body to Greeley, and

1 an epi" -- I don't know how to pronounce that word.

2 MR. CALDERBANK: Epidemiologist.

3 MR. MEISTER: Okay.

4 -- "an epidemiologist that I have talked to con-
5 cerning this said that this was pure insanity and that
6 he knew of one exact such case that caused an outbreak
7 of cholera. And I urge you to handle this health threat
8 to all Greeley citizens. Everybody can be affected by
9 this, and we cannot be complacent with such a danger.

10 "My informant believes the funeral home where the
11 body is shipped is The Masons in Greeley. Please act
12 quickly as lives could very well hang in the balance.
13 I'm sending copies of this letter to most health officials
14 in the entire State of Colorado. My attorney has advised
15 me not to reveal my name due to possible legal hazards,
16 but if necessary I will do so to the press for my chil-
17 dren live here and I have seen a cholera epidemic.

18 "Very sincerely, a citizen."

19 MR. LeCHER: Who was that letter sent to?

20 MR. MEISTER: I beg your pardon?

21 MR. LeCHER: Who was that letter sent to?

22 MR. MEISTER: Well County Health Department.

23 MR. LeCHER: The county health department.

24 Was it also sent to the press?

1 MR. MEISTER: No, it wasn't.

2 The woman in the county health department knew of
3 Susan's death. And actually, Susan had worked -- this is
4 in conjunction with Well County General Hospital. And
5 she had known Susan before Susan got involved in Scien-
6 tology. And she knew the fact that Susan's body was
7 coming to Greeley, and she called me and said, "Here's
8 a letter," she said, "that makes me sick."

9 MR. SHOEMAKER: Mr. Meister --

10 MRS. GARVEY: Did you --

11 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- what is the date on that letter?

12 MR. MEISTER: This letter is dated August the 19th,
13 1971.

14 MR. CALDERBANK: Where did it originate from?

15 MR. MEISTER: Nobody knows.

16 I have -- I've received all kinds of anonymous
17 letters like this.

18 MR. CALDERBANK: Is there a postmark on the --

19 MR. MEISTER: It was postmarked Greeley. It was
20 mailed in Greeley.

21 MR. FLYNN: In fact, it's going to be marked as an
22 exhibit, there is a policy of the Church called Third
23 Partying, which will be brought up at a later time.

24 And I believe that's all -- the letter from Mr.

1 Thomas, dated 7 July 1971, will be the next exhibit.

2 And that letter, dated August 19th, 1971, will be the
3 exhibit after that.

4 And I believe that that's all the direct testimony
5 of Mr. Meister.

6 (A copy of a letter, dated July 7,
7 1971, to George Meister, was marked
as Exhibit No. 43, as of this date;

8 A copy of a letter, dated August 19,
9 1971, to Well County Health Depart-
ment, was marked as Exhibit No. 44,
10 as of this date.)

11 MR. MEISTER: There's just thing I wanted to add.
12 This has been very hard for me to do and -- well, ten
13 years ago I couldn't have done this. I couldn't work;
14 I couldn't function for a year. But it's -- I'm hopeful
15 that this is going to help somebody.

16 What I wanted to say is when we did go to Morocco,
17 Jack Galbraith and I were there and we went on board the
18 ship. I took thirty rolls of film. And coming back in
19 the car -- we got back to Casablanca and my camera was
20 there but the film was gone; the film was stolen.

21 They -- when I went on board the ship, I went over
22 there with the express idea of seeing Lafayette Ronald
23 Hubbard. I knew nothing about the Church of Scientology;
24 I knew nothing about what their doctrine was; I didn't

1 know anything about how they operated. I did know that
2 my daughter was dead, and I wanted to talk to Lafayette
3 Ronald Hubbard as one father to another because he has
4 a daughter, Diana, who was approximately the same age as
5 my daughter. And I thought that, under any circumstance
6 like that, one father would be glad to talk to the other.
7 He refused to see me.

8 MR. LeCHER: He refused to see you? Did he know --

9 MR. MEISTER: Yes. He was on the ship.

10 We were -- when I went on the ship to look around,
11 they said, "This is where Susan slept." And then they
12 said, "This is where she died." And it was a little
13 cabin, you know, where -- it appeared -- it was near the
14 pilot house, and it appeared, like, this would be a place
15 where somebody who was on watch, you know, might catch
16 a few winks prior to going on watch again or something.
17 But this is the cabin where they supposedly found the
18 body.

19 Now, the way Susan is dressed here, this is exactly
20 the dress she had on when she was laying there in death.
21 And this dress was a dress that her mother made for her
22 before she left.

23 And in effect, in my judgment, this is a Class A
24 uniform. In the United States Army when the General

1 Court Martial convenes, you must wear a Class A uniform
2 with all your ribbons. And the sentence of the Court
3 Martial is carried out and they either shoot you or hang
4 you or take your ribbons off. I found her, in my judg-
5 ment, in a Class A uniform.

6 You can draw your own conclusions. I know what I
7 think.

8 MR. LeCHER: I better say, for the record -- well,
9 first of all, I want to thank you for telling this very,
10 very tragic story.

11 Of course, it is not the function of this Commission
12 to determine the facts of your daughter's death; however,
13 we accept this evidence as helpful as shedding some light
14 on the history of the Flag organization.

15 I -- the stories are getting more bizarre and more
16 bizarre as each witness comes before us.

17 I really don't have any questions for you, either,
18 at this point. I, frankly, don't know what to ask you.
19 I just know that they certainly don't seem to -- I don't
20 know of any organization -- I don't know how they could
21 act that way. They're acting -- frankly, from what you
22 tell me, they're acting more like animals than human
23 beings. And the way they disregarded your daughter's
24 body is just tragic.

1 Mr. Berfield.

2 MR. BERFIELD: I asked the Hartwells what they
3 could tell Clearwater because they were some older people,
4 and I was thinking about the older people. But, Mr.
5 Meister, I have a daughter, too, and I don't think you
6 have to tell the people of Clearwater anything.

7 MR. MEISTER: Well, you know, in the case of every-
8 one who's been here at this microphone and have spoken,
9 they've been in some way connected with the Church of
10 Scientology. I haven't; I never will; and I hope to
11 God that no one else will.

12 MR. LeCHER: Mrs. Garvey. I'm sorry, are you
13 through, Mr. --

14 MR. BERFIELD: Yes.

15 MR. LeCHER: Mrs. Garvey, do you have any ques-
16 tions?

17 MRS. GARVEY: Mr. Meister, on your outline, on
18 page three, there's some comment in here about flying
19 out of Morocco: "Scientists urgently contacted
20 Meister and tried to settle by offering cash. At the
21 airport he was approached by a large man who told Mr.
22 Meister, 'We are watching you.'" Okay. In the letter,
23 dated November 11th, from the Assistant Secretary of
24 State, "the Apollo's port captain threatened in the

1 presence of the American Vice Counsel from Casablanca,
2 William Galbraith, that he had enough material, including
3 illicit photographs of Miss Meister, to smear Miss
4 Meister."

5 Do you want to comment on that section of that?

6 MR. MEISTER: Sure.

7 Well, what happened was on this -- let's see, on
8 the first part of this, my flight was scheduled to go back
9 to New York from Casablanca on Sunday. Pan Am was only
10 running one flight a week. And everything that we could
11 do -- I arrived there on Sunday. And everything that
12 we could do had been done. I mean, in my judgment, from
13 the experience we had in Safi, it was such total frustra-
14 tion. I was getting nowhere.

15 And the longer I stayed in Morocco, the less com-
16 fortable I was. And I was very uneasy. And I was --
17 well, having been in Morocco before and knowing what went
18 on, human life doesn't mean anything in that part of the
19 world. I really didn't expect to come back when I went
20 over there.

21 So, I was going down the elevator of this Mar
22 Harbor Hotel, and I happened to see a man there that
23 looked American. And I spoke to him and asked him if he
24 was from the States, and he said, "Yeah." He said, "I'm

1 the manager of Pan Am." I said, "Good. Is there a
2 flight" -- this is Wednesday. I said, "Have you got a
3 flight out of here?" He said, "No. We don't have any-
4 thing until Sunday that's going to New York." I said,
5 "No, but is any other airline going?" He said, "Yeah,
6 Lufthansa's got a flight tomorrow morning that goes to
7 Frankfort, Germany." I said, "Can you get me on it?" He
8 said, "Sure." I said, "That's fine."

9 So, after -- he went over to his office, and I
10 went by a roundabout way and got over there because I
11 was followed and watched all the time that I was there.
12 I went over and had my ticket reworked for Frankfort.

13 And the following morning, about seven o'clock in
14 the morning, I was paying my bill. The Scientologists
15 told me they would take care of all my expenses. They
16 never took care of anything. My hotel bill was, like,
17 seven hundred dollars for four days, and I was told by
18 the hotel that "You'll have to pay it." So, I knew that
19 they meant exactly what they said or I'd have wound up
20 in some Moroccan jail. So, luckily, they took an Ameri-
21 can Express card, and I paid the bill.

22 But as I was getting ready to leave, Peter Warren,
23 who was usually late to any kind of a function we had, here
24 he came. And this man was very upset. He said, "I have

1 to talk to you." I said, "Okay, what do you want?" I
2 said, "I can give you five minutes, I'm leaving." So,
3 he said, "Come over here," and we went over to the far
4 corner of the lobby. He said, "We want to make a settle-
5 ment with you." I said, "What do you mean?" He said,
6 "We want to make a cash settlement."

7 He did mention a sum of money. And I thought to
8 myself, "If this was a suicide, if all these facts -- why
9 the settlement? Why is this necessary now?" So, I told
10 him, I said, "You know the address of my cousin in
11 Scottsbluff, Nebraska. He's my lawyer. If you want to
12 make any settlements, talk to him; don't talk to me."
13 So, I left.

14 Then, when I got to the airport, we had to take
15 cholera shots before we got out of Morocco. I think some-
16 thing was going on at that time. And about the time I
17 got through these cholera shots and I was getting ready
18 to board this flight, this guy -- he was a large man,
19 very immaculately dressed, with a blue pinstripe suit,
20 carrying a briefcase. He set the briefcase down and
21 he grabbed me and he spun me around like a top. And he
22 said, "We're watching you." And he said, "When you get
23 back to the States, we want you to know this." It scared
24 the hell out of me.

1 So, I called Jack Galbraith. There was one of these
2 phony pink telephones in the airport that took a slug
3 about the size of a silver dollar. It was a brass token,
4 and the thing worked, luckily, and I got a hold of him
5 and told him what happened. He said, "They were trying
6 to scare you." I said, "They did." So, I jumped on the
7 flight and left.

8 Now, you mentioned another point. What was that?

9 MRS. GARVEY: It then went on to the fact that the
10 Vice Counsel from Casablanca had enough -- well, was
11 threatened -- "the Apollo's port captain threatened in
12 the presence of the American Vice Counsel from Casablanca
13 that he had enough material, including illicit photo-
14 graphs of Miss Meister, to smear Meister."

15 MR. MEISTER: Yes.

16 On one occasion I received an anonymous letter
17 from somebody named -- it was signed Jack Donahue, General
18 Delivery, San Francisco, California, stating that --
19 Mr. Donahue says that "I've been contacted by certain
20 persons about the purchase of certain films of interest
21 to you. I was offered a thousand dollars. Perhaps,
22 you might like to purchase these at a slightly increased
23 price? If so, please write me in care of General
24 Delivery, San Francisco. Sincerely, Jack Donahue."

1 I turned these over to the United States Postal
2 Inspector, and they set up an elaborate trap at the
3 post office in San Francisco. And they had done sur-
4 veillance on this, like, for a month. Nobody ever picked
5 up anything.

6 MR. LeCHER: Was this before your daughter's death
7 or after?

8 MR. MEISTER: After.

9 MR. LeCHER: What --

10 MR. MEISTER: Then, the other thing was in Jack
11 Galbraith's case, he was Vice Counsel. He was called by
12 the Church of Scientology, the ship, Apollo, to come
13 down to Safi; they wanted to talk to him after I left.
14 See, my sudden departure was -- I was scheduled and they
15 were scheduled to leave Sunday, but I thought I better
16 get out of there fast. And I got out of there, and I
17 was on that Lufthansa flight and I was in Frankfurt,
18 Germany relaxing before they were aware that I was gone,
19 I guess.

20 This letter -- Jack went down there anyway. And
21 when he went down there, they accused him of putting
22 Coca Cola in their engines to ruin them. And they said,
23 that "We can make things plenty hot for a nosy Vice Coun-
24 sel coming around here." And they -- this is a letter

1 that I got from his wife. And it, in part, says, "Jack
2 is still working to fulfill your request and get some
3 information but has had little success so far. The crew
4 of the famous ship tried to make things very difficult
5 for Jack with various government authorities, including
6 the Senate and the White House. However, apparently,
7 there was no permanent damage done, except, perhaps, to
8 the ship itself, which had to go to such drastic lengths
9 to cover up something. But be careful."

10 MR. LeCHER: Any other questions, Mrs. Garvey?

11 MRS. GARVEY: I think someone mentioned about
12 R 245. Are you aware of that?

13 MR. CALDERBANK: Yeah, I --

14 MRS. GARVEY: Is that after you -- after your
15 daughter died you became aware of that or --

16 MR. MEISTER: Oh, this? I didn't know anything
17 about this cult until after that, after my daughter's
18 death.

19 MRS. GARVEY: So, everything that you now know about
20 Scientology, you've learned since she has died and the --

21 MR. MEISTER: Sure.

22 MRS. GARVEY: -- investigation. Okay.

23 MR. MEISTER: Sure.

24 As more things come out, I think this is a very

1 beneficial thing that you people are doing here. I have
2 a feeling, in my own mind, that you're going to save some
3 lives.

4 MRS. GARVEY: We hope so.

5 MR. LeCHER: All along we've felt the people have a
6 right to know, and that's why we're holding these hear-
7 ings.

8 Mr. Meister --

9 MR. MEISTER: That's the reason I gave up my busi-
10 ness and came here.

11 MR. LeCHER: We appreciate it.

12 MR. HATCHETT: Mr. Meister, thank you, and I will
13 search for the truth. I don't care to question you.

14 MR. MEISTER: Well, you can go ahead because I'll
15 be glad to answer.

16 MR. SHOEMAKER: Mr. Meister, I had a -- you had
17 indicated that you've been having -- that you had a lot
18 of trouble with the Church of Scientology.

19 Those letters that you read, such as that anonymous
20 letter to the health officials and so forth -- have
21 other things continued to happen to you?

22 MR. MEISTER: My telephone's been tapped.

23 MR. CALDERBANK: How do you know?

24 MR. MEISTER: It was tapped at the telephone

1 company.

2 MR. SHOEMAKER: It was found --

3 MR. MEISTER: Yes.

4 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- a tap?

5 MR. MEISTER: Yes.

6 MR. HATCHETT: At the telephone --

7 MR. MEISTER: Oh, yeah, yeah. They do that.

8 They've infiltrated government offices. They went
9 into Washington, D.C. They went into the FBI offices
10 and --

11 MR. HATCHETT: Oh, we know that.

12 MR. MEISTER: Oh, yeah. Well, infiltrating the
13 telephone company is child's play compared to that.

14 MR. HATCHETT: I'm sorry for that outburst. I
15 wasn't going to ask you a question.

16 MR. MEISTER: Yeah, they do --

17 MR. HATCHETT: Do you mean, in your mind, the tele-
18 phone company in Greeley -- in that office, your tele-
19 phone was --

20 MR. MEISTER: Yes. Your telephone could be tapped
21 right here in Clearwater in the telephone office.

22 MR. HATCHETT: I have devices on mine --

23 MR. SHOEMAKER: Do you have -- are there other
24 types of examples, Mr. Meister? I mean, have they

1 continued to send you such letters?

2 MR. MEISTER: Oh, I've received death threats on
3 the telephone.

4 MR. SHOEMAKER: You have?

5 MR. MEISTER: Sure. Somebody was going to blast me
6 like they blasted my daughter. Well, they didn't say --
7 identify themselves, but I've been told that "You're
8 going to get the same thing your daughter got."

9 MR. SHOEMAKER: Has this type of harrassment con-
10 tinued recently?

11 MR. MEISTER: No, no. It continued up until the
12 time the FBI made that raid. And after the time the FBI
13 made that raid, of course, they were exposed to the pub-
14 licity nationally that they were. It -- that's been the
15 end of that.

16 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Calderbank.

17 MR. CALDERBANK: Just one.

18 Mr. Meister, did you know at that time that the
19 Apollo, the ship, was the Flag Base, the quote, unquote
20 "Flag"?

21 MR. MEISTER: Not before I went there, no. I didn't
22 even know of its existence.

23 MR. CALDERBANK: The reason we question you, as the
24 Mayor so -- put it so well previously is now we have

1 Flag here, and we are trying to discover whether or not
2 the same policies that have existed throughout --

3 MR. MEISTER: I don't know.

4 MR. CALDERBANK: -- are still here in Clearwater.

5 MR. MEISTER: I don't know.

6 But I know, from the way this thing was put
7 together, it was -- it was quite ingenious. This thing --
8 this ship was purchased in England; it was a war surplus
9 item, and they put it to sea. But it was under Panamanian
10 registry; it was making -- in foreign ports. Hubbard was
11 the Commodore on board and, of course, legally, under
12 admiralty law, on the high seas and in foreign ports, he's
13 the law.

14 MR. CALDERBANK: Did you -- did you verify by
15 dental records or whatever that the body that --

16 MR. MEISTER: Yes, I did. It was an unpleasant
17 experience.

18 We opened this box and -- myself, and our family
19 dentist confirmed that it was, in fact, Susan's body.
20 Because at that point in time, I wasn't ready to accept
21 anything. And yes, it is. She's -- my daughter is
22 buried in that grave and in that casket.

23 MR. CALDERBANK: Counsel in Morocco, were they --
24 or did they try to obtain other -- especially, the photo,

1 the --

2 MR. MEISTER: No. Everything in -- it seemed to
3 me like the Scientologists were in total control.

4 MR. CALDERBANK: Thank you.

5 MR. LeCHER: I'm just curious: When you went to --
6 Mr. Hubbard was on the ship and you went to him as a
7 father speaking to a father, he wouldn't even talk to you?

8 MR. MEISTER: He refused to see me.

9 MR. LeCHER: Even after the tragedy and why you
10 came that great distance, he just -- any reason why he
11 wouldn't see you?

12 MR. MEISTER: He didn't give a reason. We sent
13 one of his people to ask him, because we knew he was
14 aboard the ship. But the reply came back, "No."

15 MR. LeCHER: I have no further questions.

16 I thank you, Mr. Meister.

17 MR. FLYNN: Mayor, I think that's all that I would
18 put in today.

19 I would just note that -- for the record, that there
20 have been two documents, which I submitted -- to date, of
21 the Church of Scientology and, if need be, we can put
22 into the record pertaining to those documents.

23 Thank you.

24 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Flynn, we have, probably, one more

1 day, unless we extend these hearings. About how many
2 more witnesses do you have? How much time will you --
3 much more time will you need?

4 MRS. GARVEY: We can't do it on Sunday; that's
5 Mother's Day.

6 MR. FLYNN: I have seven more. What I'm going to
7 have to do tonight is try to -- try to restrict their
8 testimony to specific areas; there'll be a lot left out.
9 But in view of the time constraints that we're suffering
10 from, and -- along the documents that are going to go
11 into evidence, I will mark them and leave them for your
12 perusal. Some documents pertaining to use of auditing
13 information on a persistent basis by the Church of Scien-
14 tology, tomorrow I will put on the overhead projector.

15 I would hope that I could get most of the testimony
16 of those seven witnesses in tomorrow.

17 MR. LeCHER: We've been averaging about two and-a-
18 half witnesses a day. And so --

19 MR. SHOEMAKER: Commissioners, it might be that,
20 you know, depending on how it goes, obviously - we want
21 to determine it as quickly as we could - but we might
22 consider going a little longer tomorrow night, if that's --

23 MRS. GARVEY: Oh, sure, even lunch hour.

24 MR. HATCHETT: Let's take a shorter lunch hour.

1 MR. CALDERBANK: How about the pleasure of the
2 Commission? Is there a person, Mr. Flynn, here that
3 you're -- would you like to hear another witness? It's
4 about five-thirty; we don't have a City Commission meet-
5 ing. If we could get one more witness in, I think we'd
6 come closer to the deadline.

7 MR. LeCHER: No. I would rather --

8 MRS. GARVEY: Is Vision Cable running out of time?

9 MR. LeCHER: -- have a -- Vision is running out
10 of tape.

11 I would rather meet -- take a shorter lunch hour
12 and, possibly, work longer tomorrow night, if we have to.

13 MR. CALDERBANK: Or extend --

14 MR. LeCHER: Do you have any -- well, that's
15 another option.

16 Do you have any indication, Mr. Flynn, that we
17 will have a meeting Monday with the Scientologists?

18 MR. FLYNN: I have no idea. I haven't heard any-
19 thing from them.

20 As I said in my opening, I would hope that they
21 would respond, and I hope that this Commission would have
22 the opportunity to question them.

23 MR. LeCHER: At this point --

24 MR. FLYNN: I don't know.

1 MR. LeCHER: -- we have no indication that
2 Scientology will respond by Monday.

3 MR. CALDERBANK: I'd just like to throw this out:
4 There is one person that I've -- I've seen his name
5 throughout these testimonies.

6 Does anyone know, the witnesses or counsel, per-
7 haps, if Artie Maren is still a member of the organiza-
8 tion? I would -- that is one person -- I see his name
9 continually through the testimony, and I think that would
10 be one person that I feel the Church of Scientology would
11 want to have come before us. And I would gladly like to
12 see Mr. Maren testify here.

13 MR. FLYNN: Since Mr. Maren was in the -- a member
14 of the Guardian's Office, Public Relations Division, at
15 a very high level, I think that would be a very appropri-
16 ate suggestion.

17 MR. LeCHER: If you're out there, we'd like to talk
18 to you Monday.

19 The meeting is adjourned.

20 (Whereupon, the hearing was
21 adjourned until Saturday, May 8,
22 1982, at 9:00 a.m.)

23 *****
24 *****

C E R T I F I C A T I O N

I, Karen E. Rizman, a certified court reporter and Notary Public, do hereby certify that the foregoing hearing transcript of the City of Clearwater Commission Hearings Re: The Church of Scientology, pages 4 through 345, is a true and accurate transcription of my dictated tape recordings of the proceedings taken at the Clearwater City Hall, Clearwater Florida, on Friday, May 7, 1982.

Karen E. Rizman
Karen E. Rizman

